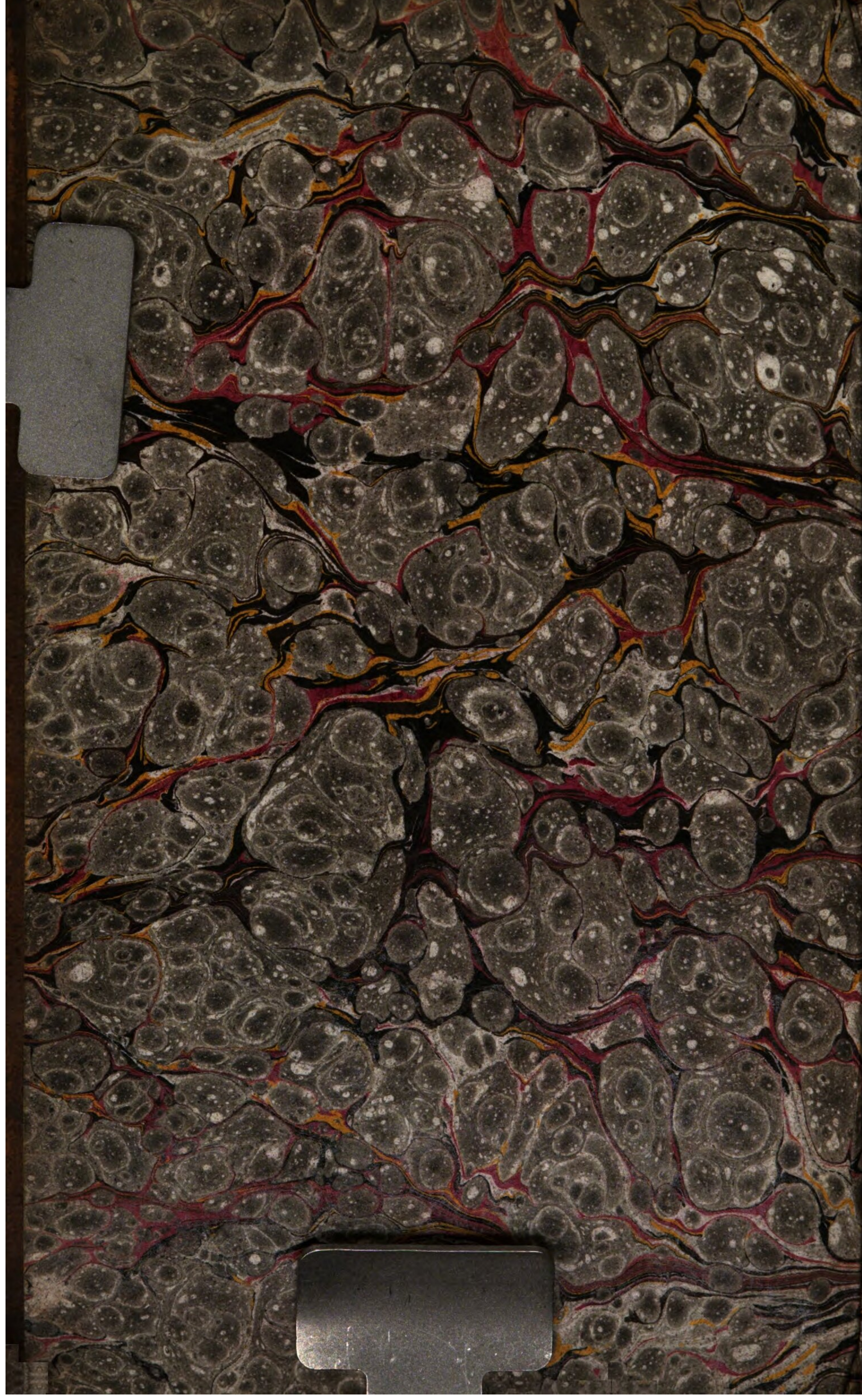
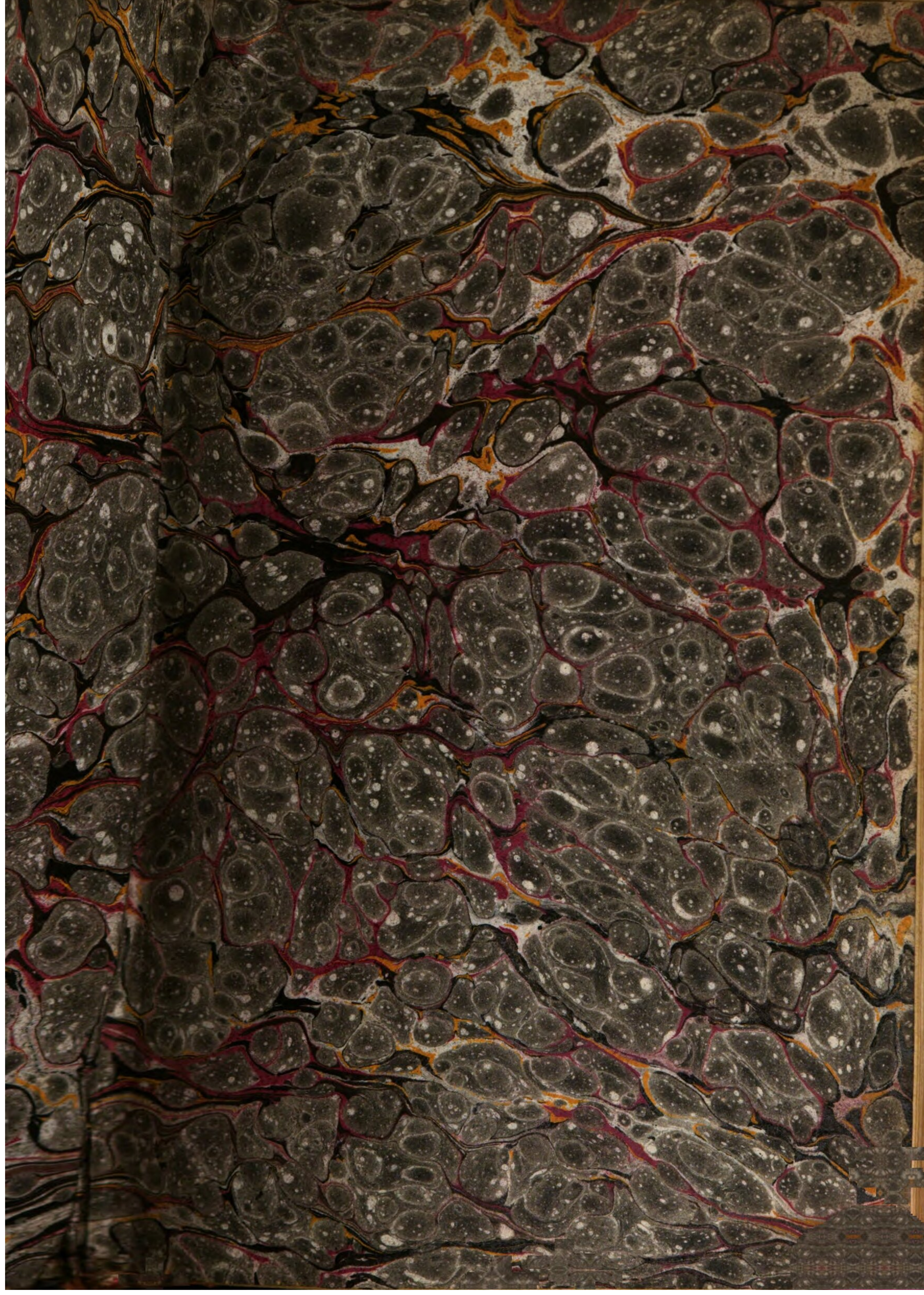








PR. 1506. a.

<36633855080018

<36633855080018

Bayer. Staatsbibliothek

oec. 911-1

Oeconomia. S. oeconomiae singularum
regionum. 89.

~~Oec. gen. No. 221.~~

R

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

VOL. I.

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

VOL. I.

A M E R I C A N
H U S B A N D R Y.

Containing an ACCOUNT of the
S O I L, C L I M A T E,
PRODUCTION and AGRICULTURE,
O F T H E
B R I T I S H C O L O N I E S
I N
N O R T H - A M E R I C A and the W E S T - I N D I E S;

W I T H
Observations on the Advantages and Disadvantages of settling
in them, compared with GREAT BRITAIN and IRELAND.

B Y A N A M E R I C A N.

I N T W O V O L U M E S.

V O L. I.

L O N D O N,
Printed for J. BEW, in Pater-noster-Row.

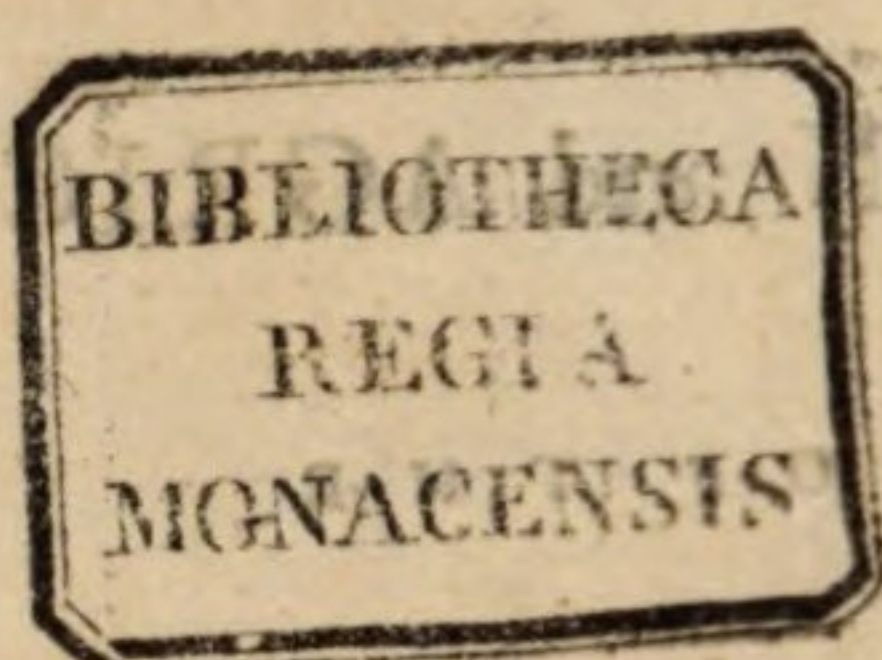
M D C C L X X V.

H U S B A N D R Y .
A M E R I C A N

Containing an ACCOUNT of the

S O I L , C L I M A T E ,

P R O D U C T I O N , &c.



B R I T I S H C O L O N I E S

I N

N O R T H - A M E R I C A and the W E S T - I N D I E S ;

W I T H

O P I N I O N S on the Advantages and Disadvantages of Settling
in them, compared with Great Britain and Ireland.

B Y A N A M E R I C A N

I N T W O V O L U M E S .

V O L . I .

L O N D O N ,

Printed for J. B. W. & P. R. B. R. H. W.

1784.

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

C H A P. I.

N O V A S C O T I A.

Soil and climate of Nova Scotia—Agriculture—Fishing—Lumber—State of the Settlers—Islands of Cape Breton and St. John—Observations.

TO judge of the climate of Nova Scotia by the latitude would lead any person into the most egregious mistakes. Between 44 and 50 degrees of latitude in Europe we find some of the finest and most pleasant countries in this quarter of the world; but in Nova Scotia the case is very different. The winter lasts seven months, and is of a severity that is dreadful to new comers, the deepest rivers are frozen over in one night, so as to bear loaded waggons; the snow lies in some places ten feet deep, and upon level tracts it has

VOL. I,

B

been

been known to be six feet deep : the inhabitants are shut up in their houses, and, except in the towns, lead a miserable life ; are almost in as torpid and lifeless state as the vegetables of the country ; much of the summer is spent in laying in fuel for the winter, and brandy and rum are then the greatest luxuries the people indulge in. Such a degree of cold as is then felt benumbs the very faculties of the mind, and is nearly destructive of all industry. When this severe winter goes, at once comes a summer (for they have no spring) of a heat greater than is ever felt in England. The snow is presently melted, and runs in torrents to the sea ; the ground is thawed, the trees are presently in leaf, and the little husbandry here practised is then begun. But what is almost as bad as the extremes of heat and cold, are the perpetual fogs, which render the country equally unwholesome and unpleasant ; and, what is peculiarly provoking to the inhabitants, last far into summer. Such is the climate ; it is bad almost in excess ; but we are not to imagine that it banishes husbandry, which might be the first conclusion of such as were unused to northern latitudes.

The

The soil varies greatly : in many parts it is thin and gravelly on a bed of rock ; for many years this was what they endeavoured to cultivate, but ill success taught the inhabitants a change which has proved very advantageous. They fixed in the salt marshes on the bay of Fundy, which, although they required a very expensive drainage, yet, from the fertility of the soil, repaid the farmer much better than other tracts gained with much less difficulty. The soil in these marshes is a white or blue clay, mellow when in culture and marly ; if the water is well conveyed off, it is capable of producing great crops, being suitable to the heat of the summer. But the expence of getting this land is not small ; the sea is to be dyked out, those dykes are to be kept in repair, and the temporary flashes conveyed off. Further, only the line next the coast is of value, as that only has the benefit of harbours for boats and schooners, and for carrying off lumber for the West Indies. Most of the advantageous tracts were patented several years ago ; but the lots change hands often, and at present many of them are to be sold cheap enough, though under culture.

4 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

An idea of their management may be gained from the following particulars: upon the settlers first going they fix upon a piece of marsh, with an adjoining one of wood-land, seldom less in the whole than from five hundred to eight hundred or a thousand acres: if the marsh is already banked, they pay an annual tax for that work; if not, they must execute it before any profit can be made. They build the house on the edge of the wood-land; a work that costs nothing in materials from the plenty of wood, which is fine, consisting generally of oak, pine, or black birch: but all the trees are grubbed, which makes the labour heavy.

Three years are nominally given to settle the tracts assigned; but this is not strictly adhered to, but extended by favour to six or seven. After ten years a quit-rent is paid to the king of two shillings for every fifty acres; also a covenant entered into of planting two acres with hemp of every fifty taken up: the planters are kept to this article, but with very little effect, for the climate is utterly improper for that production.

The marsh land is fine, and wants little more after draining but to set the plough
to

to work for sowing wheat: it is all covered with a short but thick and spongy moss, which they plough in, and on one ploughing harrow in their wheat. This work they perform as soon as the weather breaks, and the snow is all gone; they do it in a very clumsy manner, attending not the least to their lands being laid neat and regular. In September the corn is ripe: they usually mow it, and the crops they get, notwithstanding the soil being good, scarce ever amount to middling ones in England. I have been assured, that two quarters of bad wheat in quality, are a great crop. They have hardly any idea of fallowing, but in the succeeding year plough up the stubble for another wheat-crop, which they continue as long as the land will yield it, and then leave it to recover itself, sometimes, however, changing for beans. The wood-lands, when cleared, they plant with pease, potatoes, cabbages, &c. the latter production is very useful to them, they keep under the snow in winter very sound.

As to inclosures, they have only a ring fence, and one or two near the house; not always that; sometimes none but what parts their marsh land from the woods.

6 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

Cattle, in summer, are turned into undrained marshes and the woods, and in winter are three parts starved.

That I may give as clear an idea of this management in all its relations as I can, I shall insert the expences of settling the plantation of Reeves's on the bay of Fundy, as it was put into my hands by a gentleman on whom I can depend.

	l.	s.	d.
Freight, &c. of five persons from England, - - -	105	0	0
Patents, fees, &c. for nine hundred acres, - - -	37	8	6
Dyking, - - - - -	172	0	0
Building the house, barns, boat-houses, &c. - - -	67	10	0
Stock of the farm, - - -	70	0	0
Grubbing two hundred and thirty acres of wood-land, at 25s. - - - - -	287	5	0
Seed, and putting in the crop, -	52	0	0
A schooner, seventy tons, at 40s. - - - - -	140	0	0
A shallop, - - - - -	26	8	0
	957	11	6
	Brought		

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 7

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward,	957	11	6
A whale boat, - - - -	10	10	0
Netts, lines, twine, and fun-			
dries, - - - - -	98	15	0
Seamen's wages for a season,	27	8	6
Bread, seventy hundred, at 15s.	52	10	0
Pork, three barrels, at 50s.	7	10	0
Beef, six barrels, at 40s.	12	0	0
Arms and amunition, - -	26	0	0
Furniture and fundries, -	156	0	0
	1348	5	0

The annual produce after a few years was calculated at

Six hundred quintals of cod			
fish, at 14s. - - - -	420	0	0
Mackarel and shads, sixty-			
seven barrels, at 20s.	67	0	0
Jamaica fish, twenty-two			
quintals, 9s. - - - -	9	18	0
Refuse ditto, eighteen quintals,			
at 6s. 6d. - - - -	5	17	0
Ship timber and lumber, -	63	0	0
	565	15	0

8 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

It is much to be regretted, that the annual expenditure was not known; but if the high price of labour is considered—the wages of the fishermen—the repairs of the vessels—nets—implements—ammunition—wines—rum—tea—sugar, and other luxuries, &c. all these articles would certainly make a considerable deduction from this annual product. As to the products of the land, they are more than consumed at home. Can any unprejudiced person suppose that the sum of thirteen hundred pounds might not be expended on waste lands in Great Britain to much better advantage? I will not so far anticipate the subject as to calculate here, but most assuredly we may determine that, in point of *profit*, such a sum might be more beneficially expended in British husbandry, than in that of Nova Scotia.

I say, in point of *profit*, as to that of pleasure, there are other circumstances to be considered, which are material; these particularly concern the great plenty of game in the country, and the general freedom of all sporting and fishing. It has been asserted, and not upon bad authority, that a boy of twelve or fourteen years of age, with his gun, would maintain ten or
twelve

twelve in family the year round, pork and bread excepted. Two boys have been known to catch above two hundred hares in one winter with twine snares. Six boys, in three canoes, shot, in four days, one hundred and fifty wild-geese, and four hundred black ducks. To this may be added, that eels are in the little rivers so plentiful, that they keep immense quantities of them frozen for winter provision.

These particulars, indeed, indicate, not only pleasure, but also a considerable degree of profit; for a country, which will admit of such circumstances, must yield no trifling advantages in housekeeping: and however insignificant such a point may seem in a general account of a country, yet is it of importance in the eyes of those who quit their own to settle in America. In Britain, the game laws are so strict that unqualified persons must give up all thoughts of the pleasure of shooting and fishing, as well as the advantage in feeding their families, or be liable to severe and infamous penalties; and that this monstrous contrast sends no trifling number of people to the colonies I have not a doubt.

In the preceding accounts the reader finds that the whole product of the new plan-

plantation (and that a considerable one) consists in fish and lumber. It is remarkable, that without the fishery the inhabitants of this colony would starve; their husbandry is insufficient to feed them; a circumstance strongly characteristic of the merit of Nova Scotia as a colony. In this respect the farmers somewhat resemble the inhabitants of Devonshire, Dorsetshire, and Cornwall, before the northern colonies almost beat the mother country out of her share of the fishery; a very great portion of the English Newfoundland fishery was carried on by little farmers on the above-mentioned coasts, who went out as soon as their spring seed was over, and returned before harvest: but in Nova Scotia it is the principal dependance of the people for their subsistence; and the only sale by which they can supply themselves with manufactures and other necessaries.

Their other export is lumber to the West Indies, but of this the whole province does not send out more than sells for five thousand pounds, and sometimes not so much. A part of the winter season is applied to cutting and sawing trees, but from the severity of the season the progress made in this work is inconsiderable, and
yields

yields no great profit to the farmer. The distance of those islands, with the vast superiority of the more southern colonies in climate for the winter execution of this work, lessen the profit of the Nova Scotians greatly.

Neither the fishery nor the export of lumber prove advantageous enough to render the settlers comparable in ease and wealth to the people of New-England, New-York, &c. or, I may add (and this is what I mean particularly to inculcate) to the same class of men among our farmers in Britain; except in the articles, not immaterial I allow, of shooting and fishing: but when the difference of climate is considered; the agreeable and healthy life which is lead even in winter in England; the friendly society enjoyed by our lowest classes of farmers in our country towns and village alehouses, upon market days and other meetings—the goodness of our roads, and the security of living, what can tempt any that feel such advantages to leave them in pursuit of imaginary happiness in the woods of Nova Scotia? Where the winters are miserably severe, where society is scarcely any where to be found—without a road in the country, and where a hos-

tile race of Indians, till very lately, rendered the whole colony unhappily insecure. But the great superiority remains to be mentioned: promotion, if I may so express myself, is cheaper in England; for it appears from the preceding calculation, that a much larger sum is necessary to go to, and settle, with any advantage in Nova Scotia, even on the smallest scale, than would be sufficient to stock a good farm in England. The fishing apparatus is expensive; and if that employment is neglected, the most profitable branch in the country is lost: the planters must degenerate into mere tartars, without a commodity for sale wherewith to buy manufactures. Let these circumstances be considered, and I think it must be apparent, that many of the emigrants who go to Nova Scotia with a view to practise a husbandry, &c. more profitable than that of Europe, must find themselves miserably deceived.

What sort of a country must it be where government is forced to give a bounty on raising corn to keep the people from starving? Yet this is the case with Nova Scotia. On all wheat raised it is one shilling a bushel; on barley, oats, and pulse, nine pence, and on roots six pence.

Relative

Relative to the islands of Cape Breton and St. John I must observe, that the former has only a few plantations, made by connivance, by fishermen, merely for the convenience of its situation for the cod fishery. But the island of St. John was granted to some well-known noblemen, since the peace, with a view to colonize the whole: the scheme was originally formed by the late Earl of Egmont; but he did not live to see any success attend the plan, which yet was laid as well as most could be for such climates, and the execution begun with great spirit, at an expence that would have brought into culture no inconsiderable tract of waste in England or in Scotland; and that the success would have been greater and infinitely more beneficial at home than in America, cannot for a moment be doubted. Several hundred of settlers have been fixed there, yet they are at present supplied with food from New-York: instead of a beneficial system of pasturage and planting hemp, they have already, like all these northern colonists, taken to the fishery, as the only means of paying for the necessaries of life, in direct contradiction to the designs of their patrons. This is, and ever will be, the consequence

sequence of colonizing in such northern latitudes, where agriculture must ever be carried on with feebleness ; where the climate is to the last degree rigorous ; and where every spot is inhospitable and frigid. To plant colonies in such situations, is acting contrary to every rational idea of colonization.

I am sensible that the original idea of planting Nova Scotia was not so much upon a plan of *agriculture* as *defence*. The encroachments of the French made settlements and fortresses necessary ; and the neighbourhood of Louisburg rendered a safe port, as a retreat for the navy, indispensable : upon this plan garrisons were necessary : and these could not be supported without an adjacent agriculture. There is something rational in this, but it extends no further than the necessity of the case, and not to the immense expence which the nation has suffered on account of the colony, amounting to considerably more than a million sterling ; besides, this argument, since the peace, has no longer any validity, whereas we have acted as if it continued in full force ; and after feeling the unprofitable expence of one snowy desert, have planted a second. This conduct
would

would have been excusable had we possessed no other territories in America, but while such immense districts remained uncultivated to the south, it was really inexcusable upon every principle of good policy.

CHAP.

C H A P. II.

C A N A D A.

*Soil and Climate of Canada—Agriculture—
Inhabitants—River St. Laurence—Na-
ture of the Country not yet settled—Ex-
ports—Importance of this acquisition—
Observations.—*

CANADA is much colder in the winter than Nova Scotia, which may be accounted for by the distance from the sea; yet is the climate greatly preferable: the air is clear and pure, and the inhabitants in general enjoy as good health as any set of people in all America. That the climate is better we may likewise gather from the productions; pumpions and melons, apples and pears, are cultivated in common; whereas in Nova Scotia, though we cannot say the country is absolutely without them, yet is the vegetation weak in comparison. In this I speak of the northern part of Canada about Quebec; for as to the south of it, in the neighbourhood of Montreal, it is far more mild, as appears

pears by several plants commonly found there and to the south, which will not live at Quebec.

The north-west wind blows, through winter, with a severity that is scarcely credible: it plainly comes through all walls that are not very thick; a candle is blown out when held against a wall that is only a brick and a half thick: all the inside of such walls are covered with snow blown through, on the side against the north-west; and the walls must be of a vast thickness, at the same time that the house is well sheltered by wood and hill, for people within not to feel the wind blow on them. This dreadful north-west is felt throughout the continent, even to Charles Town, in South Carolina; and it has been absolutely asserted that it has blown over the whole Atlantic ocean, and been felt in Europe. It is this wind which renders the climate of all North America so peculiar that no other is similar to it. Hence arises the severe frosts felt there in such southern latitudes, that the like is never known in Europe. Sharp frosts are sometimes felt in Florida, in latitude 30, which is that of Egypt and Morocco. This is owing to the north-west winds.

They acquire their extreme coldness from the immense extent of snowy continent over which they blow, possibly from the North pole, whereas the continent of Europe and Asia ends in latitude 75, an open sea being to the north. This has been well explained by a late writer, from whom, candour demands I should acknowledge, that I borrowed the hint *.

This wind in Canada is more severe than in Nova Scotia, the snows are also as deep and as universal, but the air is clear, being free from the fogs which render the latter country so extremely disagreeable. The winter is not, however, absolutely without employment; wrapt up well in furs, winter expeditions are undertaken, and sawing and cutting lumber go on, though not with near such alacrity and effect as in the more southern colonies, where the workmen are employed as regularly in that season as in summer.

The soil in Canada is of two sorts, the stoney, and the pure loam, or mould without stones; both are cultivated, but the latter is much the best; it is black or

* Dr. Mitchel's *Present State of Great Britain and North America.*

reddish,

reddish, and is certainly as fine land as any in the world ; and were it in a more favourable climate would yield as rich productions. There are vast tracts of it in Canada which would, in many parts of England, let at twenty-five shillings an acre, but here are uncultivated ; all the settlements and farms in this country being only on the banks of the rivers, principally on that of St. Lawrence ; the cultivated country is only a narrow slip on each side the river, scarcely any where half a mile broad, unless it spreads on account of other streams that fall into the principal one. In some places, however, the cultivated country is some miles broad, particularly near the three towns.

Respecting the vegetable productions of this colony there are found almost all the useful plants that are cultivated in Scotland, and many that succeed better in England than in Scotland. The common crops are wheat, barley, rye, and oats ; several sorts of peas and beans ; many sorts of roots, particularly carrots, parsnips, and potatoes, but the latter not in plenty, from the French not much affecting them. Many of the farms have an orchard, though not so commonly as in the old English colonies to

the southward : apples, pears, and plumbs succeed well ; but peaches they get with difficulty, nor are they of a good flavour : mulberries will not grow here. Walnut trees, carried from France, dye every year to the root, but shoot out again in the spring.

Their husbandry is very bad ; the system is taking a crop and what they call a fallow, that is, they take a crop of wheat and after it leave the land at rest for a year, not for ploughing, but that the weeds may grow and be eaten off by the cattle : this method can arise from nothing but the plenty of land, for surely common sense might tell them, that a field, answering the purpose of a meadow, by the quantity of weeds on it, must be a strange preparation for corn. If they left it for ten or twelve years, till the grasses came so thick as to choak the weeds, it might, when ploughed up, become at once good corn land, as we find in many places is the case in England. In general they let the lands rest only one year, but some who have more land than the rest, leave it sometimes for two, three, or four years, before they sow it again : white clover, by that time, comes in great plenty.

No

No crop gets more than one ploughing, which is in April, after the frost breaks; then all their sorts of corn are sown, wheat as well as the rest, consequently they have only a spring wheat: however, a few farmers have of late years got into the way of sowing the same grain in autumn; they do not thereby get an earlier harvest, but the grain is weightier and better, and the crop more abundant. As soon as the weather breaks, all the ploughs in Canada are at work to get in the corn, waiting very rarely, and but on small spaces of land, for carrying on the manure; and on one ploughing, which is performed with oxen or horses indiscriminately, they sow all sorts of grain and pulse. Their crops are as good as moderate ones in England; from four to six or seven septiers per arpent are commonly gained of wheat, that is, about two or two quarters and a half per English acre: oats yield very large crops, they sow them for their horses and other cattle; barley is a poor crop with them; and peas a very uncertain one, but sometimes they get a fine product of them.

Every farmer has annually a small piece of flax, but it is only for the use of his

family: they have none that is good, whether owing to their management of it, or the climate, I know not. They have also a piece of tobacco in every farm, for the family: all smoke it here.

They have in all parts of Canada very fine meadows of natural grass, of a fine sort*, with great plenty of white clover; not low marshy spots, but high upland meadows, the soil dry, sound loam; these are great advantages to the farmers; they yield fine crops of good hay which is mown in August.

The country inhabitants of Canada are all little farmers; very few of them having large farms, at least if we give that term only to the land they usually keep in any culture. Villages are rarely met with, and the few there are consist only of here and there a mechanic, or a schoolmaster: they are a chearful, hospitable people, and have behaved themselves with much good sense and politeness to the English that have settled amongst them since the conquest. At Quebec and Montreal they are remarkably gay and social, which indeed is the case in a good measure in most countries

* *Poa Angustifolia.*

that are so cold as to confine the inhabitants to their houses for a long winter; without a social disposition, such winters would be insupportable. They are further a very happy people; yet their enjoyments are by no means numerous, and the whole country lies under two evils which almost entirely prevent encrease; the want of communication in winter with the rest of the world; and the want of money for circulation. This affects the whole colony equally, and makes their share of cheerfulness an absolute necessary of life.

Was it not for the river St. Lawrence the whole country would be so destitute of communication, as to be next to uninhabitable: but that noble river, which is navigable for the largest ships to Quebec, and every where deep enough for all the inland navigation of Canada, quite to the falls of Niagara, is the great chanel of communication between the different parts of the country. Indeed Canada is but a narrow strip of cultivated land along the banks of this river, which to such parts answers every purpose that can be wished, of travelling and the conveyance of merchandize, and the produce of the farms to the towns of Quebec, Montreal, and Trois Rivières,

vieres, in each of which are regular markets. No slight part of the demand in those markets is formed by the troops, who both enliven and enrich the colony.

The unfettled country, which includes all but the banks of the river is a forest, generally filled with various sorts of pines, oak, birch, &c. many of the trees are large. In parts of these forests the under-wood is thick ; in others, there is none at all. The soil in them has the same varieties as in the cultivated fields. Large tracts are excellent, and would, if cleared of wood, produce as good crops as any of the fields already in culture ; but there are not inhabitants enough to extend the cultivation ; and there are many reasons for this, which I shall mention by and by. I may observe that all that immense country to the south of the river St. Lawrence, which is part of New England and Nova Scotia, has very few tracts in it, by the report of the Indians, which are not capable of cultivation. It forms a square of three hundred miles every way, which is much larger than Great Britain ; and consists of forests on a good soil, or rich marshes. Cultivation would improve the climate, drive away the fogs, and make the country much more

more inhabitable than at present. But such improvements must be some centuries off, and in the mean time the whole will remain, except on the coast and river, a mere inhospitable desert, like Nova Scotia. The southern parts of Canada, north of the great lakes about Niagara, &c. possess a climate infinitely superior to that tract, and also the line of country from Crown Point to the river St. Lawrence, equals any part of North America for fertility of soil, and agreeableness; at the same time that the climate is so much superior to that even of Montreal, which I before observed was preferable to that of Quebec. Were it not for the country to the south of the lakes drawing away the people, these territories would soon be cultivated.

For the further information of the reader I shall transcribe the table of the annual exports from Canada since the peace of 1763.

Skins,	£. 76,000
Whalebone and oil,	3,500
12000 quarters of wheat, at 20s.	12,000
Ginseng, snake root, &c.	3,000
Timber and lumber,	11,000
	£. 105,500
	Which

Which export, with the import of manufactures, &c. employ thirty-four ships, and about four hundred seamen. But the wheat has for the last three or four years been at thirty-two shillings a quarter. As far as the skins can be gained, this colony will admit of increase, but the common idea is, that it has for some time arrived at its zenith, as the game, &c. from which they are taken, rather declines than increases; the wheat and lumber are the surplus of the colony consumption, raised by the hands which are fixed in their farms, and from habit, love of their native country, poverty, want of ability to move, or other motives, remain in it; but the export I do not apprehend is likely to increase, because new settlements are rare, but many families leave the country and move to the southward. This export is all the means which the whole body of the inhabitants have of purchasing manufactures, wines, spirits, India goods, and sugar, excepting alone the expenditure of the military and civil government, a part of which may be reckoned *profit* to the colony, and supposed to go for the same commodities.

But notwithstanding the small prospect of improvement, yet is not Canada to be
esteemed

esteemed a slight acquisition to the British empire. Indeed it is, with the territories on the Ohio, a very important one; and which, with good management on our parts, might be made of much greater consequence even to the commercial interests of Britain, than the acquisition either of Guadalupe or Martinico, supposing there was a necessity of giving up both these islands, if Canada was retained; a supposition which may be started, but which can never be believed. I have read many accounts of North America, in which the importance of this country has been pretty extensively considered, yet did I never meet with a just idea of the main strength of the argument. Dr. Mitchel seems to have understood it, but he wrote in so confused a manner, that it is difficult to gain his meaning.

The most important commercial interest of Great Britain is the supplying her colonies with manufactures, in exchange for their staple commodities. This trade, far the greatest that is carried on by England, depends on the colonies having room, not for common husbandry and farming, but for raising immense quantities of staples, lumber, &c. to enable them to pay
for

for the British manufactures; a sort of agriculture which we shall by and by find requires very different *room* from the husbandry of Europe, being incompatible with a country that is fully, or even half peopled. —It further depends on this plenty of land being also great enough for every person without much difficulty to become a planter or farmer; for if such a difficulty arises, the overplus of population must betake itself to common labour, which at once establishes manufactures, for people will not starve, and if they cannot have employment in one thing they must in another; but, on the contrary, while land is very plentiful no manufactures (further than for private use, which should not go by that name) can be fixed, because labour must be immoderately dear, where every man may with so much ease become a little farmer.

Now what I would deduce from this circumstance is, that the French policy in hemming in our colonies to a narrow country along the sea coast by that well known chain of forts which they had built quite from Crown Point to New Orleans, was admirably calculated for the absolute destruction of all our settlements, as *colonies*
supplied

supplied by Britain with manufactures, for they cut off the increase of plantations so effectually by their forts and the incursions of their Indians, that some hundred thousand people were, at the opening of the war, deprived of their agriculture, and would in a few years have all become manufacturers for sale, had not the evil been destroyed. And if a different event of the war had taken place to secure them in their encroachments, that evil would have arisen to a magnitude that would have explained in a manner too striking to be doubted, how the possession of Canada might be of more importance than a sugar island; though one exported six times more in value than the other.

It was said, I remember, that confining the French to their just bounds would have had the same effect. But this was weakly urged; for while they had Indians left them, they would always have had it in their power to prevent that necessary extension of the agriculture of our settlements, upon which our whole interests in America depend. The Indians the French collected about Fort Duquesne, though near two hundred miles from our settlers, deprived us in six months of near an hundred miles

miles of territory ; for so far did our back-settlers quit their habitations upon the cruel excursions of their enemies.

It is therefore plain, that they who rest the comparison of Canada against a sugar island, merely on the ballance of an account of exports and imports, much mistake the matter, since they overlook therein the essential distinctions which form the real importance of this colony. But in the present case there is something further than mere extent and security ; for the southern districts of Canada, those of the lakes, down to the Ohia, contain as valuable a territory as any possessed by us in America. The most fertile part of that continent, in a fine climate, and admirably adapted for the production of hemp and tobacco, commodities, I will venture to assert, is of more consequence to this nation than even sugar ; and yet I am very far from derogating from the great and undoubted importance of sugar colonies to Great Britain.

C H A P. III.

Defects in the Agriculture of Canada.

THE husbandry practised in this colony is in many respects so very defective, that I think it will not be an impropriety to point out the most material branches of their management, in which they act contrary not only to the common ideas of good farmers in England, but also to the dictates of the climate and other circumstances of the country.

First I shall remark that their system is essentially faulty. It is this,

1. Wheat or other grain.
2. Fallow, that is weeds for one, two, or three years.

There is no greater error in farming, whatever may be the country, than taking many successive crops of corn without the intervention of a fallow, or some crop which, from an extraordinary culture while

growing, answers the purpose of a fallow ; but I shall venture to assert that even this fault is less than the management of the Canadians : the food gained by their cattle is too trivial to mention ; but what condition of freedom from weeds can land be in, when the crop is sown only on one ploughing, and the land after that crop, left to run to weeds for a twelvemonth ? Yet is this the management of these people.

Let me, instead of such mistaken conduct, recommend to them never to fail of ploughing the land they design for corn in September ; the succeeding frosts and snow will meliorate it much ; if their plan is to leave it to weeds by way of a fallow after the corn, let them never fail of sowing plenty of white clover seed with the corn : the country in general runs naturally to it ; it can never be supposed therefore to fail ; but when the ground is left to seed itself, it is three, four, or five years, before a tolerable plant comes ; in the management I propose, they would have a rich meadow the first year.

Secondly. Instead of letting the land rest only one year, I would advise them to

leave it under clover three or four ; during that, or even a longer time, it would constantly improve, until it gained a thick rich turf, after which the ploughing it up for corn would be attended with great advantage, at the same time that the meadow thus gained would pay the farmer as well as the best in his farm. Suppose the white clover left four years, the system would then be

1. Corn.
2. Clover four years.
3. Corn.

But I should propose improvements in the corn years of the system. The Canada farmers are very inattentive to the change of their corn crops, making very little distinction between successive ones of wheat, barley, and oats, and pease and beans ; whereas they ought most certainly, according to the principles of the best English husbandry, interchange them by following white corn with pulse, and that again with white corn.

Thirdly, I must remark, that our French husbandmen do not properly attend to the winter support of their cattle : the climate agrees very well with cabbages of two or three sorts, turneps, carrots, kale, &c.

plants which are hardy enough to stand extremely well the field culture in that climate. These would be of very high advantage in the winter support of their cattle, and would, with the help of a greater quantity of hay (gained by means of clover on their fallows instead of weeds) enable them not only to increase their profit by these cattle, but at the same time answer a purpose equally beneficial in raising manure, a business in which their long winters might be of great efficacy. In this climate, where the soil is so chilled with intense frost, and drenched in snow and rain, it must have a coldness in its nature much demanding that warmth which manure gives, and consequently no business would be more profitable than raising plenty of it. The population of the towns of Canada is insufficient to yield the farmers much assistance in this way; nor indeed would it be of much consequence were this otherwise, unless the countrymen had better ideas of the nature of their business, since they do not carry away near so much from Quebec and Montreal as they might; for want of attention in them, no slight quantities are annually thrown into the river, which is utterly in-
ex-

excusable considering their having water carriage to every farm almost in the colony.

Were the ideas of the farmers upon this object of keeping cattle, with a view to raising the more manure, of the nature they ought to be, the articles of winter food for cattle above-mentioned, such as cabbages, turneps, and other roots, would be introduced in the arable fields interchangeably with corn, in the manner turneps are in the systems in England and Scotland: this would keep the lands in much better order than they are at present, besides being the means of raising manure and making a greater profit from the increase of cattle. Upon these principles the following system might be recommended to the farmers of this country.

1. Wheat.
2. Pease.
3. Oats.
4. Turneps.
5. Barley.
6. Cabbages.
7. Wheat.
8. White clover.
9. White clover.
10. White clover.

This system for ten years would answer all the purposes of good husbandry—would keep the land clean from weeds—would raise great plenty of winter food for cattle—and improve by their manure the products of corn.

Had I not extended this chapter to a length I did not expect, I should expatiate on other articles of their management, which I have reason to think not a little faulty, particularly in their methods of ploughing and laying their lands, which is done here in a manner more awkward and clumsy than can be conceived in England; also in the way they have of getting in their hay and corn harvest; but these and other particulars may be esteemed too insignificant for particular notice.

C H A P. IV.

The agriculture of Canada compared with that of Britain.

I AM sensible that the number of emigrants that go from Great Britain and Ireland to Canada is not considerable, nor to be compared with those who every day go to our colonies to the southward, yet as some future advocates, even for the northern settlements may arise—and as a worse country than this, viz. the island of St. John, has lately been attempted to be settled, I think it may prove of use to draw a comparison between the profit and advantages which may be expected from agriculture in Canada and in Britain, that all may, in future at least, know (if they will leave their native country) which are the parts of America that emigrants had better go to.

Much of the happiness, and many of the comforts of life among the farmers or planters of any country, depend on their raising a sufficiency of saleable products, not only to pay the expences of cultivation, but

also to purchase such commodities as they cannot raise themselves ; such for instance as many articles of cloathing, furniture, and food, not to speak of luxuries, which hardly deserve that name from the generality of the use. Some idea may be formed of the state of life in Canada from the exports being compared with the population. No list of the inhabitants has been taken since it came under the dominion of Britain ; but I have reason to think them not decreased. We are told by a good writer that before the war they amounted to 100,000 *. I have already shewn that they export to the amount of 105,000 l. which may be called 20 s. a head for the people. Now this is the whole amount of the manufactures and commodities which they consume, further than what they grow and make at home ; an amount in a country that has only one manufacture (of iron) ; which shews how slender those enjoyments of life must be which depend on foreign imports ; and that such a dependance must be absolutely necessary and essential, any one will see who considers the climate.

* *Account of the European Settlements in America,* vol. II. pag. 30.

But we are further to remember that only about 23,000 l. of this export is in the products that can have any thing to do with the farmers, viz. the corn and the lumber: the skins and furs, to the amount of 76,000 l. are almost all bought of the Indians for woollen goods, brandy, guns, and ammunition, consequently a great part of this sum goes to the Indians instead of the Canadians, a circumstance which will reduce the consumption of manufactures and foreign products in Canada to a sum far short of 20 s. a head, or even of 10 s. and will prove clearly enough that what we have here been calling the enjoyments of life dependant on importation, must be confined in a surprising degree.

Examining the affair in this light points out the nature of the country and of its agriculture. Land is in plenty, and so cheap, that every man may have as much of it as he can stock or cultivate; but labour must be extravagantly dear, as it is in every country where land is granted to all that will have it. Wood is plentiful; and food of most sorts that are produced by the country, such as fish and fowl, very cheap, and flesh not very dear. In this case we see at once the state of a farmer, or a new settler;

he has land, and wood to build him a house; and after he has stocked his farm with cattle, and implements, and seed, he has the product of it in corn and roots to feed himself and family; with fish and fowl for the trouble of taking; his flax, and his family's labour supply linen; and iron being the produce of the country, he may buy it with corn; some coarse woollens are also made, but the quantity is very trifling; there remains for him to purchase rum or brandy, several articles of cloathing, guns, ammunition, parts of household furniture, sugar, tea, wine, and India goods, if he consumes any; and in order to procure these he has no way to gain them but by his share of the export of wheat and lumber, that is 4s. or 5s. per head of his family, supposing the Indians carried off none of the import, but as they take off the most, the share of the farmers must be yet less.

It is very evident therefore that the life and enjoyments of a new settler in Canada must be strangely confined and wanting in what we should call the necessaries of life; but this objection is not of weight with those whose previous state of life was inferior, such as disbanded soldiers, servants, labourers, and some others, such may certainly

tainly make a shift to get fixed in a farm, and find in it most if not all the necessaries of *their* life: but even these must be such as are on the spot; for it would answer to none to go thither in order to gain this. When a man receives his discharge in a country where he can have land for nothing, it is his business to take it, for another colony being far more advantageous is nothing to him, who may not have money to move himself one hundred miles, instead of five hundred, which may be necessary for him to go.

That the comparison between the number of people, and the exported produce, is, in respect of Canada, a just rule to judge of the consumption of foreign products, &c. will appear from reflecting, that in this colony they have no other means of gaining them: a case which is different in our maritime ones, where a trade is carried on, and other means of bringing money into the country besides their mere agriculture.

The circumstance that must keep down this colony, and make it unprofitable to settle in, is the want of a short and regular navigation. At first sight it might be urged, that if 12000 quarters of wheat
are

are exported, more might also be, and then the farmer would find a sale for all he could raise: but the situation of the colony is such, that I should rather suppose those 12000 quarters, owing to an accidental more than any regular demand—or to the conveniency of loading ships with it going out with furs, &c. for the colonies to the southward on the coast enjoy a navigation so superior, and are so much nearer to market, that I should apprehend they would entirely undersell the Canadians.

Let it be considered as an universal rule, that agriculture can no where be a profitable employment—or one that will even yield all the necessaries of life, where the farmer has not a regular sale for every thing he raises; for if he possesses not this, he cannot with any advantage increase his cultivation, upon however small a scale it might have been before; nor can he without this scale command the money which is necessary for purchasing those things which his farm cannot produce. This is equally a fact, whether his product be wheat, tobacco, rice, or sugar. A regular market for all he raises is the soul of the farmer.

This is the distinction that must ever be made; in those colonies that have a market for the farmer's productions, he may practice his business with profit. But in those that have it not, like Canada, he can only live; he cannot get money, nor can he, if he increases his culture, gain proportionably the comforts or agreeableness of life.

From this state of the case, how can it ever be adviseable for any person employed in agriculture in Europe, to leave it for practising the same art in Canada? Whoever has in England, or Scotland, money enough to pay their passage and expences to Quebec, to stock a farm, and go thro' the expenditure of the first year, small as it is, might certainly employ that money in farming at home to better advantage: since in the latter case they are in the way of improvement, and may by industry increase their capital while they live comfortably; but in the former, they can gain only a certain point, which is living comfortably, but as to increase or improvement very little is to be looked for. Yet in this we do not exclude exceptions, which there will ever be in all cases; there are certainly men who make money in Canada—but
a few

a few instances are not what should, in such an enquiry, be attended to, but the general nature of the country, and the situation of the greater number.

If money is to be expended on the passage, stocking the farm, &c. in which works two or three hundred pounds would very soon be laid out, even for a small tract of land, in such case we may readily determine that the money might be laid out to far greater advantage in England, or in Scotland or Ireland : at the same time that we deduce this, we must also allow that there is a case in which Canada may be preferable to England, though not comparable to several other colonies : if a family in Britain have an opportunity of getting a free passage to Quebec, which may happen from more accidents than one ; and they have a small sum of money to buy a few cattle and implements, when they arrive there, in that case they will be able to get into a business sufficient for their maintenance and support, which they could not be able to do in England. This is a case clearly in favour of Canada, but it is not one that can happen often.

C H A P. V.

N E W E N G L A N D.

Climate of New England—Soil—Present state of the several counties of that province—Agriculture—Observations on the exports of New England.

THIS province lies between 41° and 45° north latitude, but like all the territories of America, it must not have an idea formed of its climate by a comparison with the European parallels: that latitude in the latter is the southern parts of France, and the northern ones of Spain, countries in which the climate is unexceptionable: but in New England the winter is much longer than it is here, and at the same time severe beyond any thing we ever experience in the sharpest frosts: the summer in heat exceeds that of Spain, and it comes as it does in most parts of North America, without the intervention of a spring: but what is worse, they sometimes experience, tho' not near so often as farther to the south, sud-

sudden changes from hot to cold when the north-west wind blows; but in general the weather is pretty uniform; in both summer and winter the sky is clear and serene; and for months together exhibits a pure azure expanse, without a cloud, or speck to be seen. The climate has been vastly improved since the country has been cleared of wood and brought into cultivation. The cold in winter is less intense, the air in summer purer, and the country in general much more wholesome. It is the climate of this province which entirely regulates its agriculture, and therefore should be well attended to, the great heat in summer, and the severe frosts in winter, with the north-west winds which blow with such sharpness, these render the culture of common wheat not near so advantageous as that of maize.

The soil of the province differs considerably, as may be supposed in a country of such great extent. The south and eastern parts are the most fertile, such as Massachusetts Bay, Connecticut, Rhode Island, and the whole tract that borders on New York, quite to the Lake Champlain. In these territories are found very considerable tracts of fine and rich land. It consists of
a black

a black mold on a red loam or clay : of loams, some stoney, but not therefore unfertile ; and parts of clay alone which is not their worst land. They have also very good sandy lands, which soil agrees best with their capital production, maize.

New England being the oldest of our American colonies, the best parts of it may be supposed to be granted away or purchased, which is the case ; but it is not thence to be apprehended that the greatest part of this large province is cultivated : in the southern divisions the country is well settled, so as for many miles together to have some resemblance of old England, but even in these there are very large tracts of forest left, which are private property, and consequently cannot now be patented. The richest parts remaining to be granted, are on the northern branches of the Connecticut river, towards Crown Point, where are great districts of fertile soil still unsettled. The north part of New Hampshire, the province of Main, and the territory of Sagadahock ; have but few settlements in them compared with the tracts yet unsettled ; and they have the advantage of many excellent ports, long navigable rivers, with all the natural advantages that
are

are found in other parts of this province. I should further observe, that these tracts have, since the peace, been settling pretty fast: farms on the river Connecticut are every day extending beyond the old fort Dummer, for near thirty miles; and will in a few years reach to Kohassier, which is near two hundred miles; not that such an extent will be one tenth settled, but the new comers do not fix near their neighbours, and go on regularly, but take spots that please them best, though twenty or thirty miles beyond any others. This to people of a sociable disposition in Europe would appear very strange, but the Americans do not regard the near neighbourhood of other farmers; twenty, or thirty miles by water they esteem no distance in matters of this sort; besides, in a country that promises well the intermediate space is not long in filling up. Between Connecticut river, and Lake Champlain, upon Otter Creek, and all along Lake Sacrament, and the rivers that fall into it, and the whole length of Wood Creek, are numerous settlements made since the peace, by the Acadians, Canadians, and others from different parts of New England. This whole neighbourhood is a beautiful country,

country, and possesses as rich a soil as most in New England. Let me also remark here, that the new settlers in these parts have cultivated common wheat with good success, so that they have more fields of it than of maize, which is not the case in the southern parts of New England; to what this difference is owing I have not been informed.

In the province of Main, particularly on the rivers which fall into the sea near Brunswick, there are many settlements made by Germans who have come over since the war; they are in general in a thriving condition, as most of the settlers are in North America that are well situated for an immediate communication with the sea; ships come very regularly to all the ports on this coast to take in loadings of corn, salted provisions, and lumber for the West Indies; by which means the farmers (who also are engaged pretty deeply in the fishery on these coasts) have a ready opportunity of conveying all their surplus products to a regular market, the great thing wanted in Canada. But still these northern coasts of Main and Sagadahock, are under the fatal influence of that freezing climate, which is bad enough in the south

parts of New England, but here approaches to the severity of Nova Scotia, though not so much involved in fogs.

The particulars of the husbandry of this province are extremely worthy of attention, because it is as it were between the most northerly colonies, and the central ones, which are of an acknowledged merit in climate, &c. The crops commonly cultivated are, first maize, which is the grand product of the country, and upon which the inhabitants principally feed. It is not however to the exclusion of common wheat, which in a few districts is cultivated with success. It would be useless to give a particular description of this plant, which is so generally known. Its culture has something particular in it, and therefore should be mentioned more particularly. It is a very large branching plant, which requires a great share of nourishment, so as to be planted singly at the distance of four or five feet square; it requires good land, and much dung, if plentiful crops would be gained; and the soil must be kept clean from weeds, by frequent hoeings, besides ploughing cross and cross between the plants: this is practised only by good farmers, but it is pity it is not universal among

among all the cultivators of this plant, for none in the world pays better for good treatment, proportioned to the value of its produce. Had Mr. Tull, the inventor of the horse-hoeing husbandry, known it, or rather had he lived in a country where it was commonly cultivated, he would have exhibited it particularly as the plant of all others which was most formed for his method of culture : even common farmers in some parts of New England have been struck with the excellency of the practice of ploughing between the rows of this grain, that they have been presently brought to practise it in common, so that it is now no longer an unusual method. One peck of the seed is the common quantity for an acre of land ; and the produce varies from twenty to forty bushels, but from twenty-five to thirty are very generally gained. The expences of this culture per acre have been thus stated.

	l.	s.	d.
Seed, - - - - -	0	0	6
Culture, - - - - -	0	11	8
Harvesting, &c. - - - - -	0	3	6
Conveyance to market, - - - - -	0	4	6
Sundries, - - - - -	0	2	6
	<u>1</u>	<u>2</u>	<u>8</u>

And the value, straw included, amounts to, from 50s. to 4l. sterling, per English acre, which is certainly very considerable: but then their management in other respects renders the culture not so cheap as it may appear at first sight, for the New England farmers practise pretty much the same system as their brethren in Canada; they have not a just idea of the importance of throwing their crops into a proper arrangement, so as one may be a preparation for another, and thereby save the barren expence of a mere fallow. Maize is a very exhausting crop; scarce any thing exhausts the land more, and this to so great a degree, that their being obliged to depend on this for their food, renders them more than any other circumstance unable to raise hemp and flax in sufficient quantities for exportation, or even for rigging their own ships, and cloathing themselves with linen. Nor have they sufficient quantities of rich land upon which they can practise a management that would include both.

Besides maize, they raise small quantities of common wheat; but it does not produce so much as one would apprehend from the great richness of the soil: this is owing to the peculiarity of the climate, for

we

we have lands in Europe that, to appearance, could bid fairer to produce large crops. But as I before observed, the new settlers in the north-east part of the province have found that wheat is to be raised with no contemptible success.

Barley and oats are very poor crops, yet do they cultivate both in all parts of New England: the crops are such as an English farmer, used to the husbandry of the eastern parts of the kingdom, would think not worth standing; this I attribute entirely to climate, for they have land equal to the greatest productions of those plants. Their common management of these three sorts of grain, wheat, barley, and oats, is to sow them chiefly on land that has laid fallow for two or three years, that is, left undisturbed for weeds and all sorts of trumpery to grow; though at other times they sow oats or barley after maize, which they are enabled to do by the culture they give the latter plant while it is growing: all their corn here is in general sown in spring, from the common idea that the climate will not admit of an autumnal sowing: but this is with exceptions; for of late years some of the more intelligent *gentlemen farmers* have, in various instances,

broken through the old methods, and substituted new ones in their room. These have, in various parts of the province, substituted the autumnal instead of the spring sowing, and with great advantage. In some parts of Connecticut and Rhode Island, they have introduced the English system of making clovers a preparation for corn; they leave the grass upon the land as many years as it will yield tolerable crops, and then plough it up, and sow wheat, which is found a much better management, than the common one. The clover affords good crops of hay once a year, besides an advantageous eatage for their cattle, which is much better than leaving the land to cover itself with weeds.

Summer fallowing is in some parts of the province not an uncommon practice, but it is not executed so well as in England; they give this preparation to land that is pretty much exhausted, and which they design for maize or for hemp, which latter also requires the addition of much manuring. What they produce is good; though not equal to the Russian, or even to that of old England; but its requiring the very best rich lands in the province, and also dunging, prevents them raising even

even enough for their own use, as their numerous shipping demands large supplies of it. They have been urged by several counties, even to a large amount, to go largely into the culture of hemp, which would certainly be a very national object, since there is no staple that any colony could raise would be more advantageous to Great Britain, or save her the expenditure of larger sums of money.

Flax they raise with much better success, as it does not demand near so rich a soil as hemp; but the more southern colonies much exceed New England, even in this article, for what is there raised is not sufficient for the home consumption of this very populous colony, whereas more to the south they export considerable quantities of flax seed.

In the best cultivated parts of New England, turneps are introducing in the field culture, but not in the manner they ought to do. This is an article that demands their attention greatly, but as I shall be more particular on them when I speak of the defects of their husbandry, I shall not enlarge on it here.

Pease, beans, and tares, are sown variously through the province, but scarcely

any where managed as they are in the well cultivated parts of the mother country. But every planter or farmer grows enough of the food for fattening hogs, for supplying his own family, and driving some fat ones to market. Hogs are throughout the province in great plenty, and very large, a considerable export from the province constantly goes on in barrelled pork, besides the vast demand there is for the fishery, and the shipping in general.

Apples may be mentioned as an article of culture throughout New England, for there is no farmer, or even cottager, without a large orchard: some of them of such extent, that they make three or four hundred hogheads of cyder a man; besides exporting immense quantities of apples from all parts of the province. The orchards in New England are reckoned as profitable as any other part of the plantation. Among the other productions of this province, I should not forget the woods, which, in the parts not brought into culture, are very noble; they consist of oak, ash, elm, chesnut, cypress, cedar, beech, fir, ash, sassafras, and shumac. The oak is very good, and employed chiefly in ship building; and the fir yields very greatly for masts, yards, and plank,

plank, even the royal navy is supplied from hence with masts of an extraordinary size ; and the export of lumber to the West-Indies is one of greatest articles in the province.

A large portion of every farm in New England, consists of meadow and pasture land ; wherein it much resembles the better parts of the mother country. In the low lands, the meadows are rich, yielding large quantities of hay, which, though apparently coarse, is yet much liked by all cattle ; the common herbage of many of these is a grass which has made much noise in England under the name of Timothy grass. Two or three tons of hay an acre are not an uncommon produce in these meadows. The farmers find great advantage in keeping a large part of their farms for pasturage, as they are thereby enabled to support large herds of cattle, and flocks of sheep, which much improve their farms.

The cattle commonly kept here are the same as in Great Britain : cows, oxen, horses, sheep, and hogs ; they have large dairies, which succeed quite as well as in Old England ; oxen they fat to nearly as great a size ; their mutton is good ; and the wool
which

which their sheep yield is long but coarse, but they manufacture it into coarse cloths, that are the common and only wear of the province, except the gentry, who purchase the fine cloths of Britain: no inconsiderable quantities of these coarse New England cloths are also exported to other colonies, to the lower people of whom, especially to the northward, they answer better than any we can send them. The horses are excellent, being the most hardy in the world; very great numbers are exported to the West-Indies and elsewhere.

It is proper to observe, that the unsettled parts of the province, which northwards extend almost from the coasts to the river St. Lawrence, are, with an exception, of some open meadows and marshes, one continued and thick forest of the above-mentioned trees, but particularly of pines; and though such parts are not brought to that value and population as the rest, yet are they to be esteemed highly valuable, and a great treasure for future exportation, whenever the legislature shall in their wisdom give a bounty sufficient to enable the New Englanders to undersell the Baltic in the ports of Great Britain; an object of infinite importance, than which there is scarcely
any

any in the œconomy of our colonies that demands more earnest endeavours. This vast forest, which is in size equal to that of the whole island of Great Britain, and extends into the greatest parts of Nova Scotia, belongs to the crown, but grants are made constantly to all such persons as apply for land, of such parts of it as they demand, under condition that they settle it in a given time and proportion; also under a reserve of all timber fit for masts for the royal navy. If there is a navigation, and application is merely made for grants in any other parts, the rest of the timber is of no slight value to the new settlers, as it yields a certain price, and is a commodity regularly exported from the province.

I shall conclude this account, with a table of the exports of this province since the peace.

Cod fish dried, 10,000 tons, at 10l.	£. 100,000
Whale and cod-oil, 8500 tons, at 15l.	- 127,500
Whale-bone, 28 tons, at 300l.	- - - 8,400
Pickled mackrel and shads, 15,000 barrels at 20s.	15,000
Masts, boards, staves, shingles, &c.	- - - 75,000
Ships about 70 sail, at 700l.	- - - 49,000
Turpentine, tar, and pitch, 1500 barrels, at 8s.	600
Horses, and live stock,	- - - 37,000
Pot-ash, 14000 barrels, at 50s.	- - - 35,000
Pickled beef and pork, 19,000 barrels, at 30s.	28,500
Bees-wax, and fundries,	- - - 9,000
Total	£. 485,000

Upon this table I must observe, that the fishery amounts to 250,900l. of it; or rather more than half the total, which shews what a great proportion of the people of this colony are employed in it. The other half is the produce of their lands, for so both ships and pot-ash must be esteemed. Cattle and beef, pork, &c. came to 65,500l. all the rest is timber, or what is made of timber; this is a proportion that gives us at once a tolerable idea of the colony. We are not from hence to suppose, that the great body of the landed interest in this country has, like Canada, no other resource to purchase foreign commodities with, than this small export. The case is very different, New England enjoys a vast fishery, and a great trade, which brings in no slight portion of wealth. The most considerable commercial town in all America is in this province; and another circumstance is the increase of population. These causes operate so as to keep up a considerable circulation within the colony. Boston and the shipping are a market which enriches the country interest far more than the above mentioned export, which, for so numerous a people, is very inconsiderable. By means of this internal circulation, the
farmers

farmers and country gentlemen are enabled very amply to purchase whatever they want from abroad.

CHAP. VI.

State of the inhabitants—Country gentlemen—Farmers—New settlers—Lower classes.

THERE is in many respects a great resemblance between New England and Great Britain. In the best cultivated parts of it, you would not in travelling through the country, know, from its appearance, that you were from home. The face of the country has in general a cultivated, inclosed, and chearful prospect; the farm-houses are well and substantially built, and stand thick; gentlemen's houses appear every where, and have an air of a wealthy and contented people. Poor, strolling, and ragged beggars are scarcely ever to be seen; all the inhabitants of the country appear to be well fed, cloathed, and lodged, nor is any where a greater degree of independency, and liberty to be met with:
nor

nor is that distinction of the ranks and classes to be found which we see in Britain, but which is infinitely more apparent in France and other arbitrary countries.

The most ancient settled parts of the province, which are Rhode Island, Connecticut, and the southern part of New Hampshire, contain many considerable land estates, upon which the owners live much in the style of country gentlemen in England. They all cultivate a part of their estates; and if they are small, the whole: this they do by means of their stewards, who are here generally called overseers: the rest is let to tenants, who occupy their farms by lease, in the same manner as it is in the mother country; the rents paid for such farms being the principal part of the landlords income.

Here therefore we see a sketch of one class of people, that has a minute resemblance to the gentlemen in England who live upon their own estates, but they have in some respects a great superiority: they have more liberty in many instances, and are quite exempt from the overbearing influence of any neighbouring nobleman, which in England is very mischievous to many gentlemen of small fortunes. Further,

ther, they pay what may be almost called no taxes ; for the increase of people and farms is so great, that the public burthens are constantly dividing ; besides their being in all instances remarkably low. This is an advantage to be found no where but in America, for all the rest of the world groans under the oppressive weight which bad governments and absolute monarchs have laid on mankind. They have also the advantage of living in a country where their property is constantly on the increase of value. Trade, navigation, fisheries, increasing population, with other causes, have operated strongly to raise the value of all the estates under cultivation, whose situation is favourable, for in proportion as the wild country is taken up good lands and convenient situations rise in value ; till we see they come, near the great towns, to as high a value as in the best parts of Great Britain, for near Boston there are lands worth twenty shillings an acre. Another circumstance, in which the estates of the gentlemen in New England have a great advantage, is that of being exempted from the payment of tythes, and rates for the support of the poor, which in Britain make a vast deduction from the product of an estate.

estate. The plenty of timber, and the cheapness of iron, and all materials for building, are also advantages to all country estates of a most valuable nature; in England this article, which is what goes under the general name of repairs, swallows up a large portion of rent, and with those already mentioned, and land-tax, leaves him, out of a large nominal rental, but a small neat income.

With these advantages, the New England gentlemen are enabled to live upon their estates in a genteel, hospitable, and agreeable manner; for the plenty of the necessaries of life makes housekeeping remarkably cheap, and counter-balances the small rents they get for such parts of their estates as they let. This circumstance is owing to the ease of every man setting up for a farmer himself on the unsettled lands: this makes a scarcity of tenants; for those who have money enough to stock a farm, have enough to settle a tract of waste land, which is much more flattering than being the tenant of another: one would suppose that such a circumstance would prevent their being a tenant in the country; but this is not the case, low rents and accidents sometimes induce them to live rather than to settle: nor, upon the whole,

whole are tenants common in New England, there are more estates that are under the management of over-seers than that are let to tenants.

Upon the whole, we may determine that the country gentlemen of New England are in many respects very fortunately situated, and as well stationed in all respects for living comfortably and at their ease, as any set of people can be: and this circumstance does not extend merely to the points which I have now mentioned, but to another which deserves attention; it is the growth of timber and increased value of forest land: in New-England, any gentlemen may have a grant of whatever land he pleases upon complying with the common terms of settlement, which are the grant of fifty acres for every white person fixed on the estate; this to a person in the country, is a condition so easily performed that they have it in their power to command almost what part of the ungranted land they please: this is an advantage unparalleled in any country of the world except our other colonies. By this means the gentlemen of New England have an opportunity of constantly increasing their estates. Those of fortune erect saw mills on their new grants, by

which means they are enabled to make a very considerable profit by the woods at the same time that they lay the foundation of future estates for their posterity.

Some modern writers, very well informed in the affairs of our American colonies, have been particularly attentive to the circumstance of the mortgages which the merchants and others of London have on their estates. This wants an explanation: the country gentlemen of New England are as free from this as any men in the world: it concerns only those who have dealings with London, these are the tobacco and rice planters; but as to the people of property in New England it is not the case with, I may say, any man in the province that is not engaged in trade.

The next class of the country inhabitants of which I am to describe is the farmers; but I must previously observe, that by farmers we are to understand not only the men who rent lands of others, but also the little freeholders who live upon their own property, and make much the most considerable part of the whole province. These are the posterity of former settlers, who having taken in tracts of waste land proportioned to their ability, have died

and left it to their descendants equally divided among all the children, by the gavelkind custom, which is prevalent throughout this province. These countrymen in general are a very happy people; they enjoy many of the necessaries of life upon their own farms, and what they do not so gain, they have from the sale of their surplus products: it is remarkable to see such numbers of these men in a state of great ease and content, possessing all the necessaries of life, but few of the luxuries of it: they make no distinction in their agriculture from the tenants of the gentlemen, only live more at their ease, and labour with less assiduity. I should observe that this set of men near resemble a similar class which we knew in England very generally, before our wealth grew so considerable as to destroy all moderation; the great, when grown wealthy as well as powerful have purchased all such little freeholds as joined their estates, and thereby exterminated one of the most useful sets of men that could be found in this or any kingdom, an event which the law of gavelkind secures the New Englanders from.

These freeholders of small tracts of land which compose the greatest part of the pro-

vince, have, almost to a point, the necessities of life and nothing more, speaking however according to our ideas of life in Europe. Their farms yield food—much of cloathing—most of the articles of building—with a surplus sufficient to buy such foreign luxuries as are necessary to make life pass comfortably: there is very little elegance among them, but more of necessities—a greater capability of hospitality, and decent living than is to be found among the few remains of their brethren in England: a class which taxes, tythes, rates, and repairs, with the increased expences of living, have almost driven from the face of the earth. It is not therefore difficult to draw a parallel between the little freeholders of Old and New England: in the former, a variety of causes have almost swept away the race; whereas in the latter they flourish as much as such a set of men can any where flourish.

Before I take my leave of the two different ranks of landlords in New England, let me observe that there is a very material difference between the country gentlemen of this colony, and the mother country, in respect of that branch of luxury which induces men to leave their estates, in order
to

to squander the rents of them in a capital. Of late years there are few men in England who call themselves gentlemen, that do not at least pay an annual visit to London with their wives and families, and spend as much in one month upon pleasure, as they do in the other eleven upon utility: In a word, the country gentry of small fortunes in England starve upon their estates, in order to make a figure at the Pantheon and Almack's; and if their rental is something above mediocrity, will not content themselves without a town house, in which to spend the better half of the year. This is a custom which wastes and destroys half the estates in the kingdom, and makes beggars of many families that might with prudent management live genteely and independently in the country.

To enter into a full account of the consequences of this branch of luxury, would be unnecessary; suffice it here to observe, that the gentlemen of New England are almost intirely free from a profusion, which could not but be fatal to their estates. It is very rarely that any families from the country make a winter residence at Boston for the sake of the small degree of pleasure which that capital affords. I know there

are instances of it, but in general the thing is otherwise. The country gentlemen live the year round upon their estates, going to town only when business calls them. And thereby they escape an expence which is equally useless and consuming.

The new settlers upon fixing themselves in their plantations enter at once into the class of these freeholders; but from poverty in the beginning of their undertakings fall naturally into a class below them, unless they begin with a considerable sum of money that raises them in the consideration of their neighbours. There are many of these who begin with such small possessions, that they are some years before they can gain the least exemption from a diligence and active industry that equals any of the farmers of Great Britain. Such men, although they may be in the road of gaining as comfortable a living as any of the old freeholders, yet rather fall into an inferiority to them; not from the manners or constitution of the colony, but from modesty and the natural exertions of a domestic industry.

Respecting the lower classes in New England, there is scarcely any part of the world in which they are better off. The price of labour is very high, and they have with
this

this advantage another no less valuable, of being able to take up a tract of land whenever they are able to settle it. In Britain a servant or labourer may be master of thirty or forty pounds without having it in their power to lay it out in one useful or advantageous purpose ; it must be a much larger sum to enable them to hire a farm, but in New England there is no such thing as a man procuring such a sum of money by his industry without his taking a farm and settling upon it. The daily instances of this give an emulation to all the lower classes, and make them point their endeavours with peculiar industry to gain an end which they all esteem so particularly flattering.

This great ease of gaining a farm, renders the lower class of people very industrious ; which, with the high price of labour, banishes every thing that has the least appearance of begging, or that wandering, destitute state of poverty, which we see so common in England. A traveller might pass half through the colony without finding, from the appearance of the people, that there was such a thing as a want of money among them. The condition of labourers in England is far from being comfortable, if compared with their American

brethren, for they may work with no slight diligence and industry, and yet, if their families are large, be able to lay up nothing against old age: indeed the poor laws are very destructive of any such provident conduct. Those laws have the effect of destroying prudence without giving an adequate recompense; the condition of the aged or diseased poor who depend on their support is in many cases lamentable; or at least much inferior to what their own previous industry would have procured them had they not been seduced by the idea of this worse than no dependence. And without extending our reflections to this part of their lives we may determine that the pay they receive for their work does not rise proportionably with the price of all their necessaries; the consequence of which is to them great oppression. On the contrary, the New England poor have no delusive poor laws to depend on: they aim at saving money enough to fix them into a settlement; their industry rarely fails of its end, so that the evening of an industrious life is universally that of a little planter in the midst of all necessaries. The public consequence of this may be easily deduced; it is a very high price of labour, and an amazing

ing increase of people; since marriages must abound greatly in a country, where a family, instead of being a burden, is an advantage.

I have more than once mentioned the high price of labour: this article depends on the circumstance I have now named; where families are so far from being burthenome, men marry very young, and where land is in such plenty, men very soon become farmers, however low they set out in life. Where this is the case, it must at once be evident that the price of labour must be very dear; nothing but a high price will induce men to labour at all, and at the same time it presently puts a conclusion to it by so soon enabling them to take a piece of waste land. By day labourers, which are not common in the colonies, one shilling will do as much in England as half a crown in New England. This makes it necessary to depend principally on servants, and on labourers who article themselves to serve three, five, or seven years, which is always the case with new comers who are in poverty.

C H A P. VII.

Remarks on the errors in the rural management of New England.

CHAPTERS of such a nature ought not to be esteemed impertinent in such a work as this, wherein I particularly mean to explain every thing in my power concerning the country management of America, from its being so little known in England. And it is of consequence to understand the defects of their agriculture, as well as the advantages of it, since we are almost equally concerned in both.

The cultivated parts of New England are more regularly enclosed than Canada, but the planters do not sufficiently attend to this circumstance ; many estates, and farms are in this respect in such condition, that in Great Britain they would be thought in a state of devastation ; yet here it all arises from carelessness. Live hedges are common, yet the plenty of timber in many parts of the province is such, that they neglect planting these durable, useful, and excellent fences, for the more easy way of
posts

posts and rails, or boards, which last but a few years, and are always out of repair. This is a negligence, and a want of foresight that is unpardonable: but though the new settlers see the inconvenience of it on the lands of the old ones, and find live hedges in many places substituted, yet do they go on with the practice, as if it was the best in the world. In many plantations, there are only a few enclosures about the houses, and the rest lie like common fields in England, the consequence of which is much useless labour in guarding crops from cattle.

Respecting their system, a distinction is to be made between the parts which have been many years in culture, and which, from the neighbouring population, are grown valuable; in these the lands are much better managed than in the frontier parts of the province, where land is of little value, and where all the new settlers fix. In the former, the farmers lay down a system which they seem tolerably to adhere to, though with variations. They sow large quantities of maize, some wheat, barley, oats, buck-wheat, pease, and beans, turneps, and clover: hemp and flax in small parcels. And these they throw after
one

one another, with variations, so as to keep the land, as well as their ideas permit, from being quite exhausted ; which they effect by the intervention of a ploughed summer fallow sometimes. When the land has borne corn for several years, till it threatens to yield no more, then they sow clover among the last crop, and leave it as a meadow for some years to recover itself. But all this system proceeds too much on the plan of the worst farmers of Great Britain, to get corn from their fields as long as ever they will bear it.

Instead of such management, I shall venture to recommend the following system.

1. Summer fallow.
2. Maize.
3. Pease or beans.
4. Barley or oats.
5. Turneps.
6. Wheat.
7. Clover for three, four, or five years.
8. Wheat.

I think such a system is well adapted to their climate and soil. But I am sensible many objections will be made to it ; particularly there being twice as much wheat as maize : in this point I am doubtful.

They

They say they cannot grow good wheat; that they *do not* grow good wheat I am sensible, but I attribute it to their throwing it into such systems as this, 1 maize, 2 maize, 3 wheat, 4 oats, 5 wheat, &c. &c. In which case, the wheat may be thin, shrivelled, and husky, without its being the fault of the climate; I am of opinion, under such culture, it would be the same in Britain. But if in this point I should be mistaken, let the sixth crop be changed for maize. In this system I consider maize, barley, oats, and wheat, as crops that exhaust the land; but pease, beans, turneps, and clover, as such as rather improve than exhaust it, provided they are cultivated in the manner they ought.

Maize is reckoned a great exhauster in New England, and they have some reason for the idea, though I think they carry it too far. The culture is something similar to that of hops; being planted in squares of about five feet, and when up, the plant is earthed into little hillocks: they ought, during the whole growth, to proceed on the exact principles and practice of the Tullian culture, of horse-hoeing it incessantly, and cutting up such weeds as grow about

about the plant, out of the reach of the horse-hoes ; these are not many, as the plants standing in squares, the horse-hoes work both ways. The misfortune is, they do not always keep the plantations of maize clean, or the earth so loose in the intervals as it ought to be, in which case one may easily conceive that the land may be left totally exhausted ; but this effect would be vastly lessened by being more assiduous in the culture, while the crop was growing — absolutely to destroy all weeds, and keep the vacant spaces in garden order : points in which the New England farmers (some few excepted) are not by any means perfect.

Turneps, and other articles of winter food for cattle, they are extremely inattentive to ; the great want of the country, which almost prevents their planting hemp in quantities, is the want of dung, and yet they will not take the only method of gaining it, which is the keeping great stocks of cattle, not ranging through the woods, but confined to houses or warm yards. This can only be done by providing plenty of winter food : at present, they keep no more than their hay will feed, and some they let into the woods to provide for themselves,

selves, not a few of which perish by the severity of the cold. Great stores of turneps, or other roots, and perhaps cabbages better still, would make their hay and straw go much further, and by means of plenty of litter, for which this country is in many respects very well provided, they might raise such quantities of manure as would double the fertility of all their lands, and give them the command even of hemp in much greater quantities than it is now raised. A more general culture of the various sorts of clovers, would also increase the means of keeping cattle, and consequently raising more dung, which is in all parts of the world, whatever may be the climate, the only means of getting good arable crops. Besides, turneps, or other roots, cabbages, clover, &c. in their growth, and the culture which such receive as stand single, much improve the land, as all good farmers in England have well known these hundred years. Nor have the New Englanders any reason to fear the having too much cattle for the constant export of beef, pork, and live stock of all kinds, to the West Indies, which is a market that will never fail them, let their quantity be almost what it may.

And

And this mention of cattle leads me to observe, that most of the farmers in this country are, in whatever concerns cattle, the most negligent ignorant set of men in the world. Nor do I know any country in which animals are worse treated. Horses are in general, even valuable ones, worked hard, and starved: they plough, cart, and ride them to death, at the same time that they give very little heed to their food; after the hardest day's works, all the nourishment they are like to have is to be turned into a wood, where the shoots and weeds form the chief of the pasture; unless it be after the hay is in, when they get a share of the after-grass. A New Englander (and it is the same quite to Pennsylvania) will ride his horse full speed twenty or thirty miles; tie him to a tree, while he does his business, then re-mount, and gallop back again. This bad treatment extends to draft oxen; to their cows, sheep, and swine; only in a different manner, as maybe supposed. There is scarce any branch of rural œconomy which more demands attention and judgment than the management of cattle; or one which, under a judicious treatment, is attended with more profit to the farmer in all countries; but the

the New England farmers have in all this matter the worst notions imaginable.

I must, in the next place, take notice of their tillage, as being weakly and insufficiently given: worse ploughing is nowhere to be seen, yet the farmers get tolerable crops; this is owing, particularly in the new settlements, to the looseness and fertility of old woodlands, which, with very bad tillage, will yield excellent crops: a circumstance the rest of the province is too apt to be guided by, for seeing the effects, they are apt to suppose the same treatment will do on land long since broken up, which is far enough from being the case. Thus, in most parts of the province, is found shallow and unlevel furrows, which rather scratch than turn the land; and of this bad tillage the farmers are very sparing, rarely giving two ploughings if they think the crop will do with one; the consequence of which is their products being seldom near so great as they would be under a different management. Nor are their implements well made, or even well calculated for the work they are designed to perform; of this among other instances I may take the plough. The beam is too long; the supporters ought to be moveable,

as they are in ploughs in England, and in Scotland ; the plough share is too narrow, which is a common fault ; and the wheels are much too low ; were they higher, the draft would be proportionably lighter. In other parts of the province, I have indeed seen better ploughs, but they are in few hands, and, besides, are not quite free from these defects.

The harrows are also of a weak and poor construction ; for I have more than once seen them with only wooden teeth, which however it may do for mere sand in tilth, must be very inefficacious on other soils, but the mischief of using such on one sort of land, is, that the slovens are always ready to extend them for cheapness to the rest. The carts and waggons are also in some parts of the province very aukward ill made things, in which the principles of mechanics are not at all considered. There are however some gentlemen near Boston, who having caught the taste of agriculture, which has for some years been remarkable in England, have introduced from thence better tools of most sorts, and at the same time a much better practice of husbandry ; and if they took pains to spread this about the province, it could not fail

fail of being attended with very beneficial effects. Societies for the encouragement of agriculture seem to be the only means of bringing it to bear, by means of premiums and bounties.

Another article, which I shall here mention, is that of timber, which already grows so scarce upon the south coasts, that even fire-wood in some parts is not cheap; and is forced to be brought from Sagadahock: this has been owing to the planters upon their first settling, ravaging rather than cutting down the woods: and what is a striking instance of inattention to their real interest, is the new settlers going on in the same manner, although they cannot but see and know the effects of it in the parts first settled. They not only cut down timber to raise their buildings and fences, but in clearing the grounds for cultivation they destroy all that comes in their way, as if they had nothing to do but to get rid of it at all events, as fast as possible. Instead of acting in so absurd a manner, which utterly destroys woods of trees, which require an hundred years to come to perfection, they ought in the first settling and cultivating their tracts of land, to inclose and reserve portions of the best woods

for the future use of themselves, and the general good of the country ; points which they have hitherto seemed to have very little at heart. Indeed, this violent and unlicensed destruction of timber, has been carried to a degree in our colonies, that calls for a preventive from the public : for it is clear to common sense, that if the legislature does not interfere in this point, the whole country will be deprived of timber, as fast as it is settled ; which ought not to be the case while any attention is given to the public interests. For nothing is of more importance to this country, though a colony, than timber : the plenty which has hitherto abounded, makes the planters so regardless of their essential interests, as to think it a commodity of little or no value. Which must be attended with worse consequences than almost any part of the ill management, which they have hitherto been attended with.

Let me, before I quit this subject, observe further, that the New Englanders are also deficient in introducing those new articles of culture, which have become common in different parts of Great Britain ; among others, let us instance carrots, parsnips, potatoes, Jerusalem artichokes,

chokes, beets, lucerne, sainfoine, and particularly cabbages ; these articles are many of them better adapted to the climate of New England than of Great Britain ; yet are they not attended to half so much : but the farmers of this country would find their interest more in the introduction of these articles, than could ever happen to any people in the mother country, where land is so scarce, that they cannot afford to make trial of any thing that they are not previously certain will answer ; whereas in these colonies the case is different ; land costs nothing ; they have enough of various soils to try every thing, without the loss of the land bringing them into those difficulties which it must ever do in countries where a considerable rent, tythe, and poor's tax are paid. But this circumstance, which is such an undoubted advantage, in fact turns out the contrary ; and for this reason, they depend on this plenty of land as a substitute for all industry and good management ; neglecting the efforts of good husbandry, which in England does more than the cheapness of the soil does in America.

C H A P. VIII.

Comparison between the benefits resulting from agriculture in Great Britain and New England.

I Have given in the preceding passages what I may venture to say is a fair and candid account of New England. I may be in numerous passages mistaken, but I have not purposely given a better or worse account of things than the fact has really been ; this observation is necessary, in order to prepare the reader for the comparison which I am going to draw. The case is not indifferent ; nor is it so strongly decisive in favour either of one or the other, as to make the argument depend upon a few strong outlines, that appear clear to the reader the instant they are produced, which is the case with Canada and Nova Scotia. On the contrary, New England very much resembles, in several essential circumstances, Great Britain. For instance, it is a country which produces all the necessaries, but none of the luxuries of life. It is a country which depends as much or
more

more upon navigation, commerce, and fisheries, than Britain does; agriculture not yielding those rich products which form the foundation in other countries of the most beneficial branches of commerce. Besides this, the face of the country in some particulars, the ranks of the people, the number of gentlemen living on their estates, the freedom of the lower classes, with various other circumstances, give an uncommon resemblance between Great Britain and New England, which may well make it a matter of difficulty to judge between them; to which if we add that both enjoy liberty, both civil and religious, we shall find that a cool, dispassionate, and candid examination is necessary, and by no means a hasty or incautious one.

The great points in favour of New England are the enjoyments of plenty of land—a freedom from heavy taxes,—from tythes,—from poor rates;—with an open market for all commodities raised. On the contrary, Great Britain lies under the disadvantage of having no land for new grants—is much burthened by taxes—and also by that of tythes—and poor rates: in this comparison the benefit is all on the side of New England; but in others there are

points much more favourable to the mother country: *First*, the climate is more favourable than that of New England to husbandry; for though the fruits of some kind in America are far beyond what we have in Britain, yet in the articles of farming produce this advantage extends to nothing of importance. Wheat is a crop far more valuable than maize, but cannot be gained in New England upon comparable terms with what it is in Britain; nor does maize produce nearly like it in quantity, nor any thing like in value. This superiority runs through all the products of a farm, and also in the price of them: which in a comparison of the two countries should never be forgotten. The exporting price of wheat, for three or four years after the peace of Paris, in the colonies was 20s. a quarter, while in England, it was from 44s. to 50s. This principal grain regulates the rest in most parts of the world, as it does in both Britain and America; the case is the same with barley, oats, pease, beans, hay, butter, cheese, and every article the farmer carries to market. If the monstrous difference of these prices be considered, it will surely be thought a counterballance to many other advantages. I am
sensible,

sensible, that wheat in America, has of late years been at 26s. to 32s. a quarter ; but then it has in England been from 50s. to 56s. so that the superiority has continued : we may safely suppose the same difference of price has run through other articles of corn ; indeed we know it has, and also, that in all products which arise in whatever manner from grass lands, the superiority in the price of England is far greater ; upon the whole, this difference may be reckoned at 50 per cent.

Now if a calculation is made of this superiority or even of 40 or 30 per cent. I am clear it will be found to more than ballance the difference of the farmers expences in rent, tythe, and rates ; and also the advantages which the New Englanders have in plenty of timber and some other articles of inferior importance.

But further, the American has in one instance an inferiority which is great and marked ; it is the price and nature of the labour which he employs : he pays more than treble the rate of Great Britain, or else submits to be served in a manner which is open to an hundred inconveniencies. This is an article of such consequence as to ballance many others.

As

As far therefore as the comparison concerns the substantial farmers in either country, the renters in Britain, and the renters or owners in New England, that rank neither with the lower classes nor with the gentlemen, I think the advantage lies clearly in favour of the former; and no slight proof that this determination is just, is the difference of wealth between these two sets of men; the farmers in Britain of the rank now under consideration are incomparable richer than the similar inhabitants of New England; among whom very few are to be found that can be called men of wealth or even property: they live in a decent comfortable manner, but rarely acquire wealth.

I do not apprehend the parallel turns out the same with the lower class of farmers, for I do not think a more miserable set of men are to be found than the little farmers in Britain; they work harder, fare worse, and are in fact poorer than the day labourers they employ, whereas in New England, the little freeholders and farmers live in the midst of a plenty of all the necessaries of life; they do not acquire wealth, but they have comforts in abundance: I freely acknowledge

knowledge the superiority of the colony in this article.

In that of the poor, and the labourers, the comparison is equally in favour of New England : in this respect common and almost universal experience tells us, that in all countries which have long been wealthy, in which a great commerce, flourishing manufactures, and established luxury are fixed, that in such countries the poor are always in a state of oppression and of misery : It would be too much to say that this *must be* so, but the fact is, that it always *is* so ; and, we see in the case in question of Great Britain, that the poor in general are in a state of poverty ; and it is necessary they should, or the trade and manufactures of the country would sink, for their prosperity depends on that low price of labour which keeps the labouring poor below the proportion of the high price of every thing else.

The last circumstance of this parallel is the country gentlemen of two, three, or to five hundred pounds a year land estate ; and here I must observe that the comparison turns out utterly in favour of the colony. Indeed the high prices of every thing at home, owing to the plenty of money, has almost

almost ruined such people, so that very few will soon be found; they must either starve, or convert their estates into money, and apply it in some line of industry to make more than common interest; they must become traders, or farmers if they do not suffer themselves to be eclipsed by every country grocer, or woolman. But this is not the case in New England; there, four or five hundred pounds a year is a great estate—not that there is not much larger, but it is sufficient for all the comforts and conveniences of life, and for such a portion of the luxuries of it, as are indulged in by any neighbour, though their estates may be larger than his. In a word, his situation is the very reverse of that of his brethren in Britain, insomuch that no change can be imagined more beneficial (in point of the expenditure of his income) than for such a country gentleman to sell his estate in England, and with the money of the sale to buy in New England; though we shall by and by come to colonies that are preferable. By such a conduct he leaves his country after making the only advantage in his power of the cheapness of money, by getting a great price for his land; and he goes immediately into another in which he finds

finds money dear; so that he profits doubly by the change.

As to gentlemen whose fortunes are considerable enough to support them in the enjoyments of the age, they of course will remain fixed, because they can get nothing by moving which they have not at home; with the circumstance of living in the midst of the luxury and elegance of the first country in the world—luxuries which they do not behold like their little neighbours, with envious eyes, but which they enjoy in common with the rich and great.

Upon the whole there are some classes, whose emigrating to New England need not surprize us, but there are others among whom it happens very irrationally.

C H A P. IX.

N E W Y O R K.

*Climate of New York—Soil—Productions—
Husbandry—Curious accounts of a new set-
tlement—Present state of the inhabitants—
Exports.—*

THE colony of New York lies between latitude 41° and 44° , which tho' partly the same parallel as New England, yet is it attended with a different climate in some respects; but in every circumstance superior, since there are productions that will not thrive in New England, which do admirably here; not owing to the greater heat (for New England is as hot as New York) but to a better and more salubrious air. The spring in New York is earlier, and the autumn late; the summer is long and warm; indeed sometimes the heat is great, but rarely oppressive; the winter is severe but short; it is not so sharp as in New England, and they have in general a clear bright sky. In winter the snow lies deep, and for two or three months; and they
travel

travel on it in sledges both here and in New England, in the manner that is common in the northern parts of Europe.

Sometimes indeed the cold is extraordinary great; of which Dr. Mitchel gives an instance. By the observations, says he, made, in January 1765, by the masters of the college at New York, Fahrenheit's thermometer fell 6 degrees below 0, which is 21 degrees below 15, the greatest cold in England.—Water then froze instantly, and even strong liquors in a very short time.—And we are told it is not uncommon there to see a glass of water set upon the table, in a warm room freeze before you can drink it, &c.*

The soil of the province is in general very good; on the coast it is sandy but backwards, they have noble tracks of rich black mold, red loam, and friable clays, with mixtures of these soils in great varieties; at some miles distance from the sea, the country swells into fine hills and ridges, which are all covered with forest trees, and the soil on many of these is rich and deep, an advantage not common in poor countries. The river Hudson which is navigable to Al-

* *Present State.*

bany, and of such a breadth and depth as to carry large floops, with its branches on both sides, intersect the whole country, and render it both pleasant and convenient. The banks of this great river have a prodigious variety ; in some places there are gently swelling hills, covered with plantations and farms ; in others towering mountains spread over with thick forests : here you have nothing but abrupt rocks of vast magnitude, which seem shivered in two to let the river pass the immense clefts ; there you see cultivated vales, bounded by hanging forests, and the distant view completed by the *Blue Mountains* raising their heads above the clouds. In the midst of this variety of scenery, of such grand and expressive character the river Hudson flows, equal in many places to the Thames at London, and in some much broader. The shores of the American rivers are too often a line of swamps and marshes ; that of Hudson is not without them, but in general it passes through a fine, high, dry, and bold country, which is equally beautiful and wholesome.

In general the soil of this province exceeds that of New England : besides the varieties I have already mentioned, there is

on

on Long Island sands that are made quite fertile with oyster-shells, a fish caught there in prodigious quantities : they have the effect of shell marle in Scotland. The productions of New York are the same in general as those of New England, with an exception of some fruits that will not thrive in the latter country ; but almost every article is of a superior quality : this is very striking in wheat, of which they raise in New England, as I have already observed, but little that is good, whereas in New York their wheat is equal to any in America, or indeed in the world, and they export immense quantities of it ; whereas New England can hardly supply her own consumption.

They sow their wheat in autumn, with better success than in spring : this custom they pursue even about Albany, in the northern parts of the province, where the winters are very severe. The ice there in the river Hudson is commonly three or four feet thick. When professor Kalm was here, the inhabitants of Albany crossed it the third of April with six pair of horses. The ice commonly dissolves at that place about the end of March, or the beginning of April. On the 16th of November the yachts are

VOL. I.

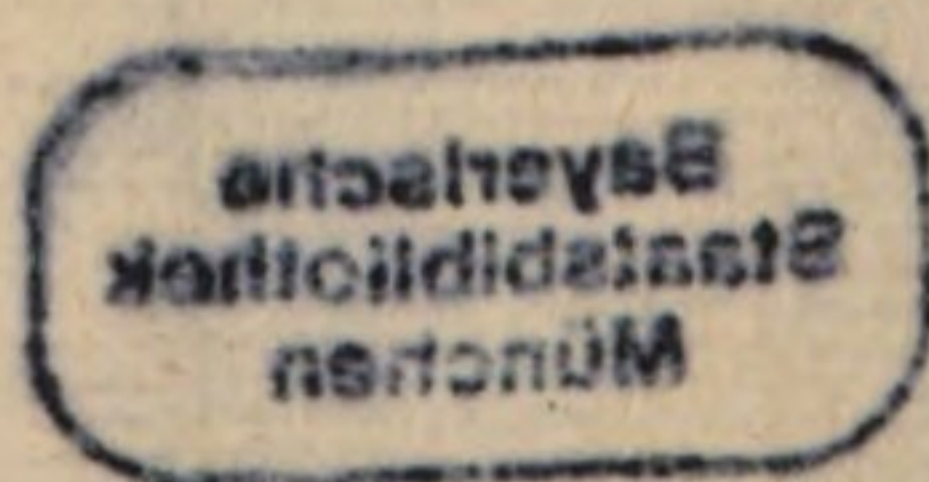
H

put

put up, and about the beginning or middle of April they are in motion again. If wheat will do here in autumn, where the ground is sometimes frozen four feet deep, one would apprehend it would succeed even more to the north.

Wheat in many parts of the province yields a larger produce than is common in England: upon good lands about Albany, where the climate is the coldest in the country, they sow two bushels and better upon one acre, and reap from 20 to 40: the latter quantity however is not often had; but from 20 to 30 bushels are common, and this with such bad husbandry as would not yield the like in England, and much less in Scotland. This is owing to the richness and freshness of the soil. In other parts of the province, particularly adjoining to New Jersey and Pennsylvania, the culture is better and the country more generally settled. Though there are large tracts of waste land within twenty miles of the city of New York.

Rye is a common crop upon the inferior lands, and the sort they produce is pretty good, though not equal to the rye of England. The crops of it are not so great in produce



produce as those of wheat on the better lands.

Maize is sown generally throughout the province, and they get vast crops of it. They chuse the loose, hollow loams, or sandy lands for it, not reckoning the stiff or clayey ones will do at all for it: half a bushel will seed two acres, and yield an hundred bushels in return: about Albany, where they have frosts in the summer, maize suits them particularly, because tho' the shoots are damaged, or even killed by the frost, yet the roots send forth fresh ones. Maize, from the greatness of the produce, may easily be supposed a rich article of culture, and especially in a province that has so fine an inland navigation through it as New York. It is also of great advantage in affording a vast produce of food for cattle in the winter, which in this country is a matter of great consequence, where they are obliged to keep all their cattle housed from November till the end of March, with exception indeed of unprovident farmers, who trust some out the chief of the winter, to their great hazard.

Barley is much sown in all the southern parts of the province; and the crops they sometimes get of it are very great, but the

grain is not of a quality equal to that of Europe. They make much malt and brew large quantities of beer from it at New York, which serves the home consumption, and affords some also for exportation. Pease are a common article of culture here, and though uncertain in their produce, yet are they reckoned very profitable; and the straw is valued as winter food. Thirty bushels per acre they consider as a large crop, but sometimes they get scarcely a third of that. Oats they sow in common, and the products are generally large; sixty bushels an acre have been known on land of but moderate fertility. Buckwheat is every where sown, and few crops are supposed to pay the farmer better, at the same time that they find it does very little prejudice to the ground, in which it resembles pease.

Potatoes are not common in New England, but in New York many are planted; and upon the black, loose, fresh woodland they get very great crops, nor does any pay them better if so well, for at the city of New York there is a constant and ready market for them; I have been assured that from five to eight hundred bushels have been often gained on an acre.

There are many very rich meadows and
pastures

pastures in all parts of the province; and upon the brooks and rivers, the watered ones (for they are well acquainted with that branch of husbandry) are mown twice and yield large crops of hay. In their marshes they get large crops also, but it is a coarse bad sort; not however to a degree, as to make cattle refuse it, on the contrary, the farmers find it of great use in the winter support of their lean cattle, young stock, and cows.

The timber of this province consists chiefly of oak, ash, beech, chesnut, cedar, walnut, cypress, hickory, sassafras, and the pine; nor is there any preceptible difference in their value of the wood here and in New England; though it declines, for ship building when you get further to the south; with some exceptions however, for there are other species of trees even in the most southern colonies that are equal to any for that purpose. New York not being near so much settled as New England, timber is much more plentiful, so that the planters and new settlers make great profit by their lumber. Upon most of the streams that fall into the river Hudson, there are many saw mills for the mere purpose of sawing boards, planks, and other sorts of lumber,

which goes down in immense quantities to New York, from whence it is shipped for the West Indies. We shall by and by see that this is a very great article in the profit of every planter. Among all the woods of this province, are found immense numbers of vines of several species, and quite different from those of Europe, some of the grapes resembling currants rather than ours. Wine has been, and is commonly made of them, but of a sort too bad to become an article of export.

Hemp is cultivated in all parts of the province, but not to a greater amount than their own consumption : flax is however a great article in the exports ; it succeeds extremely well, and pays the farmer a considerable profit. Lintseed oil is another article of export, the seed for which is raised by the planters ; but more is exported unmanufactured. Turnips also are grown in large quantities, and by some planters upon a system much improved of late years. The fruits in this province are much superior to those in New England ; and they have some, as peaches and nectarines, which will not thrive there. Immense quantities of melons, and water melons are cultivated in the fields near New York, where they come to

as

as great perfection as in Spain and Italy ; nor can it well be conceived how much of these fruits and peaches, &c. all ranks of people eat here, and without receiving any ill consequence from the practice. This is an agreeableness far superior to any thing we have in England ; and indeed, the same superiority runs through all their fruits, and several articles of the kitchen garden, which are here raised without trouble, and in profusion. Every planter and even the smallest farmers have all an orchard near their house of some acres, by means of which they command a great quantity of cyder, and export apples by ship loads to the West Indies. Nor is this an improper place to observe that the rivers in this province and the sea upon the coast are richly furnished with excellent fish ; oysters and lobsters are no where in greater plenty than in New York. I am of opinion they are more plentiful than at any other place on the globe ; for very many poor families have no other subsistence than oysters and bread. Nor is this the only instance of the natural plenty that distinguishes this country : the woods are full of game, and wild turkies are very plentiful ; in these particulars New York much exceeds New England.

These upon the whole are circumstances which contribute much to the plenty and happiness of living in this country; and among other causes, contribute very greatly to the plenty and general welfare of all ranks of the people, nor should I here omit making some observations on the state of the settlers and other inhabitants.

To what causes it is I know not, but New York is much less populous than New England to the north, and Pennsylvania to the south: there is no circumstance that results from nature, or from the government of the province that can account for this; but to whatever cause it may be owing, certain it is, that we ought to esteem it as fortunate for such persons as now chuse to settle there. There are vast tracts of unpatented land yet remaining on the river Hudson and its branches, which abound in every beneficial circumstance that can render a new country desirable to settle in.

This however, will not, in all probability last long, for the new settlements increase every day; so that in a few years there will not be many such spaces abounding in wood and navigable water unoccupied.

But there is one mistake made by most
new

new settlers, especially on the river Hudson; they have in general an idea that the only good soils are the deep black loam, or clays; and accordingly reject all the tracts that consist of a thin reddish loam on rock; but I have been assured by some intelligent gentlemen, that experiment has proved this soil, though so thin, fertile to a great degree in most of the productions which are common in the whole province: they have mentioned particularly, barley, pease, potatoes, turneps, clover, and even wheat. And as a confirmation that this opinion was just, I was favoured with the following particular of the produce of a field of this soil, which having been rejected by several new settlers, was planted by the person to whom I am obliged for this intelligence. The piece of land contained sixteen acres, the soil a light thin loam, of a reddish colour, on a lime-stone rock.

First year.

Grubbed, ploughed, and prepared for potatoes, and planted without dung: produce 11000 bushels, which were sold at 10d. per bushel, which is 453l.

Second year.

Ploughed once, and sown with wheat, produce 512 bushels, which sold for 85l.

I

Third

Third year.

Planted again with potatoes, produced 8496 bushels, which sold for 10d. a bushel, or 354l.

Fourth year.

Sown with wheat again, produce 600 bushels, which sold for 120l.

Fifth year.

Sown with barley, produce 730 bushels, which sold for 73l.

Sixth year.

Ploughed once, and sown with pease, the produce 630 bushels, which sold for 53l.

With this crop of pease clover was sown, and left an excellent pasture, which was reckoned as profitable as any other piece of land in the whole plantation.

First year,	-	-	-	£. 453
Second do.	-	-	-	85
Third do.	-	-	-	354
Fourth do.	-	-	-	120
Fifth do.	-	-	-	73
Sixth do.	-	-	-	53

Total £. 1138

Which is near £. 11 15 0 per acre per annum.

Now

Now upon this account I have several remarks to make, which I think important, as it shews what may be done in this country, by good husbandry, even when no manure is used. The reader doubtless observes, that the *system* of management in this field ran upon the principle of an intervening crop of potatoes or pease between every two of wheat and barley. This is the husbandry which I would always recommend, but which is diametrically opposite to the practice of the New York planters; who make not the least scruple of taking six or eight crops successively of maize, wheat, rye, barley, or oats, without ever thinking of the least necessity of introducing pease, buckwheat, turneps, clover, or any other plant which in its nature or culture would prove a preparation for corn. The idea exemplified in the preceding sketch shews quite a different conduct.

In the next place I must observe, that the register of this field shews strongly the importance of cultivating potatoes on fresh woodlands; the products here reaped from them exceed infinitely those of any other crops, which should animate the farmers of this province to extend the culture of them;

them ; but the importance of planting them does not only rest in the amount of the produce, however considerable, they prepare the ground for corn better than any other plant, of which no bad idea can be formed from the crops which here succeeded them. There is a notion, common in many parts, that the lands even in New York are far inferior to those of Europe in general, but I am apt to believe that this is very much owing to the husbandry here being so much inferior. The instance I have now given of a bad soil, not esteemed here, but well managed, shews what might be done if the same attention was given to the culture of the earth, that is common in Britain.

The same gentleman to whom I am indebted for the preceding account, gave me another of the expences and product of a considerable plantation on the river Hudson. This I shall insert with pleasure ; for such accounts are what I have most aimed at gaining for all the colonies, not always with success indeed, but it is only from such that we can form a just idea of the advantages and disadvantages of American husbandry. Such accounts of agriculture in Europe are common in numerous books,
while

while the management and state of the agriculture of the colonies has been little attended to, for which I am clear no good reason can be assigned.

The plantations in question consisted of 1600 acres, situated partly on the banks of the river Hudson, and partly on each side a small river that runs into it ; the purchaser was not the first settler, for the land was marked out, a house built, and some offices, with a small tract of land cleared : nothing, however, was done either expensively, or with good judgment ; and the place was in a state of neglect when purchased. The price was 370l.

A small saw-mill, and additional offices were built on it immediately, which with some other improvements, of no great amount, came to 260l.

Eight hundred acres were grubbed, and the trees sawn and rived into plank, board, shingles, and staves : the whole expence of which was 1162 l. Many of the trees were oak and elm, of great size ; also some limes of extraordinary growth.

Eight new inclosures were made, the fences, posts, and rails and ditching, with all expences, came to 32 l.

The

110 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

The stock fixed on the plantation was as follows :

Eight negroes, at 34l.	-	-	-	-	£. 272
Four indented servants, at 11l. each, for 3 years,	132				
Two hired by the year at New York, 12l.	-				72
Three German emigrants, at 9l.	-	-	-	-	81
Servants provisions, and cloathing for negroes,	}				
besides what produced, - - - - -					
Implements of husbandry, expences of, exclu-	}				
sive of timber, - - - - -					
Salary of overseer, 3 years,	-	-	-	-	110
Seed for the first crop,	-	-	-	-	90
Sundry expences,	-	-	-	-	113
Cattle,	-	-	-	-	230
Provisions, &c. for 3 years,	-	-	-	-	300
					£. 1543

The produce of the three years, in various articles, came to the following sums.

Lumber.		l.	s.	d.
17,000 feet of boards, at 5l. 2s. 6d. per 1000.	87	2	6	
970 plank, at 3s. 8d.	177	16	0	
220,000 shingles, at 12s. per 1000	132	0	0	
60,000 staves, at 4l. 10s. per 1000.	270	0	0	
260 pieces of timber, at 7s. 6d.	97	0	0	
Sundry articles of various kinds,	187	10	0	
		951	8	6

Recapitulation.		l.	s.	d.
Purchase,	-	370	0	0
Saw-mill, &c.	-	260	0	0
Clearing 800 acres,	-	1162	0	0
Eight inclosures,	-	32	0	0
Stock,	-	1243	0	0
Provisions,	-	300	0	0
Total		3367	0	0

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. III

The annual after expence was :

	l.	s.	d.
Interest of capital, - - - - -	168	7	0
Repairs, - - - - -	12	0	0
Inclosing, - - - - -	10	0	0
Negroes, - - - - -	16	0	0
Servants wages, - - - - -	135	0	0
Implements, - - - - -	13	0	0
Sundry expences, - - - - -	100	0	0
	454	7	0

Produce 1st year.

	l.	s.	d.
4 acres of potatoes, 260 bushels per acre, 1040 bushels at 8d. - - - - -	34	13	0
82 acres Indian corn, 30 bush. per acre 2460 bushels at 1s. 6d. - - - - -			
10 acres pease, failed, - - - - -	0	0	0
22 of wheat, 22 bushels per acre, at 3s. - - - - -	72	12	0
	291	15	0

Produce 2d year.

	l.	s.	d.
6 acres potatoes, 200 bushels per acre, 1200 bushels, at 10d.	50	0	0
135 acres Indian corn, 32 bush. per acre, 4320 bush. at 1s. 6d.	324	0	0
90 acres wheat, 20 bush. per acre, 1800 bush. at 3s.	270	0	0
40 acres pease, 15 bush. per acre, 600 bush. at 1s. 3d.	37	10	0
40 acres barley, 2 do. potatoes, 16 turneps, 35 oats, 32 clover, 20 Indian corn,	}		for plantation,
		0	0
416 acres in culture.	£.	681	10 0
			Pro-

112 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

Produce 3d year.

	l.	s.	d.
8 acres potatoes, 300 bush. per acre, 2400 bush. at 10d.	50	0	0
170 acres of Indian corn, 35 bush. per acre, 5950 bush. at 2s.	595	0	0
60 acres wheat, 16 bush. per acre, 960 bush. at 3s.	144	0	0
80 acres pease; 40 failed, 40 at 10 bush. 400 bush. at 1s. 3d.	25	0	0
Cattle,	87	10	0
150 acres clover,			
2 potatoes,			
20 barley,			
20 oats,			
10 Indian corn,			
2 wheat,			
38 turneps,			
for plantation,		0	0
560 acres in culture.	£.	901	10 0

	l.	s.	d.
First year,	291	15	0
Second,	681	10	0
Third,	901	10	0
Lumber,	951	8	6
	2826	3	6
Capital,	3367	0	0
Product first three years,	2826	3	6
Remains,	540	16	6
Three years interest,	504	0	0
	£.	1044	16 6

800 acres were soon in culture, which were usually employed in the product of

8 acres

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 113

8 acres potatoes,	- - - - -	£. 50
100 do. Indian corn,	- - - - -	300
100 do. wheat,	- - - - -	300
40 do. pease,	- - - - -	60
400 do. clover,	- - - - -	
20 do. barley,	- - - - -	
20 do. oats,	- - - - -	
80 do. turneps,	- - - - -	
32 do. fundries, including orchard and yielding,	- - - - -	
Cattle,	- - - - -	200
Fruit,	- - - - -	25
Annual lumber,	- - - - -	60
		995
Expences,	- - - - -	454
		Profit £. 541

This profit is, besides the annual improvement of waste, from which the lumber is cut, and also the advantage of the surrounding wastes, which are granted as fast as the family increases; but which will not admit of calculation, because wastes are converted to profit merely in proportion to the ability, that is the money, of the planter.

The first observation I shall make on this account, is the lumber paying nearly the expence of clearing, which is an high advantage, and certainly owing to the expedition of the saw-mill: in many parts of the northern provinces, where a saw-mill is not used, the expence of clearing is in-

finitely the greatest part of a new settler's work. But it is plain from every article in this account, that the great advantage in settling, is the command of a large sum of money, that the planter may go spiritedly to work, and make his ground produce him something considerable immediately, which can never be done if he has not money enough to clear away the woods speedily. Half this capital I am clear would not yield a proportionable profit; on the contrary, it might not afford half such interest for the amount. It is by means of this advantage, that near two thirds of the whole expenditure is repaid by the product of the three first years, which would be far enough from the case, if the sum of money at the beginning of the undertaking had been much less. If the planter's time and trouble, for three years, be not reckoned, as indeed it need not in reason be, then the sum of 1044l. might be reckoned the original capital, which would make the annual profit on the undertaking immensely great.

But the great superiority of the account of this improvement, over those that can be made in the cultivated parts of Europe, is the *increase* of cultivation. The account
here

here is stated at 800 cultivated acres, and 60l. a year from lumber; but this does not include the annual increase of the cleared land, which may be carried on as fast as the planter's money will allow. Instead of 60l. a year in lumber, it might be 2 or 300l. by having hands enough, and the land, when cleared, all brought into culture, at the same profit as the first 800 acres; the quantity of land to be had does not stop, let him be as able and industrious as he will. This advantage I think greater even than the making the profit above stated.

For here let us consider, that in the cultivated parts of Britain, or any other European country, a farmer, who is on such a farm as 3000l. will stock, supposing him to make as great an advantage as this planter, lies under two disadvantages; tho' he has this neat income of 541 l. per annum from his business, he lives in a country where such an income is very easily spent, even by a farmer, and actually is spent by many farmers, without their making in any respect the appearance of gentlemen, which is owing to the luxury of the age, and the high prices of every thing in the country. Secondly, if on the contrary he

does not spend such an income, but lives frugally on a part of it, and is desirous of expending the remainder to the best advantage, he cannot throw it into an annual increase of his business, because he is on every side surrounded by the farms of his neighbours; and though he may now and then hire other farms, it is not to be depended on; and if they do not join his old one he will be better without them; besides the circumstance of such farms being probably either too large, or too small for the money he has to spare: so that the only advantage he can, in a general way, put his savings to, is the common interest of four or five per cent.

The case of the New York planter is very different. For first he makes his income of 541 l. a year, in a country where money is so dear, and most things so cheap, that he may live upon a part of it in a way far more genteely, upon a comparison with all his neighbours, than he could do with twice the total in England, the consequence of which must naturally be a far greater probability of a person's saving at least a part of his income, than if he lived where the whole of it would hardly support him. Secondly, upon the supposition of his spending

ing

ing only a part of his income, he has the advantage of being able to throw the remainder, like a merchant, immediately into business, and to make it pay him as good interest for his money as his original stock. He has only to increase his servants, his cattle, and his works proportioned to the sum of money he has annually to lay out, which gives a proportioned increase of land under culture, and consequently an increase of crops to sell: this results from his settling in an uncultivated country, and is upon the whole, so great an advantage, that it overbalances an hundred inconveniences. For by means of this circumstance, the planter is able to make a continued compound interest of all the money he can raise, at the rate of from 40 to 100 per cent. till he has enlarged his cultivation so much as to be incapable of management. The immense increase of compound interest is well known, yet ought not the reader to startle at the proposition: suppose the planter lives upon, or, more properly speaking, spends in manufactures, wine, tea, sugar, spices, and spirits, 24 l. per annum, he has then 300 l. per annum for improvements; which 300 l. the first year, will clear a certain portion of waste

(the lumber nearly paying the expence) cultivate, stock, and convert it to saleable crops. From that time, this portion of land becomes equally profitable with the rest of the farm, and yields a proportionable advantage: this profit is the next year added to the 300l. and a still larger piece taken in, which still yielding its profit, like the rest, the accumulation continues; and the annual amount of savings grows incessantly; being, to all intents and purposes, plainly a compound interest.

But here let me observe, that this prodigious advantage is not annexed to the mere settling in New York; on the contrary, the cultivated parts of the province are in this respect exactly upon a par with Britain; for fixing in a plantation, in that part of the province, would be fixing in a spot surrounded with other plantations, and consequently possessing no great part of this advantage which I have been endeavouring to explain. It is only in the back country, which is yet forest, that new settlers can find plenty enough of land to be secure of those additions to their farms, which are attended, when made, with such benefit. Nor is it only in this respect that the waste country is the most eligible to settle
in;

in ; there is so much greater choice of land through such parts of the province than in the other, and the land of course so much better, that although plantations are often to be bought cheap in the cultivated parts, yet is it more adviseable for these reasons to settle in the back country ; always provided there is a navigation near the farm, for all land products are in America, too cheap to bear a land carriage.

This comparison between New York and Britain is so much in favour of the former, that I think it is necessary to make some observations upon that part of the state of agriculture in Britain, which gives such a superiority to America : not that I shall enter into a full calculation of this point. But at present I must observe, that the reason of this inferiority of Britain is not a want of land—for the wastes of this country including those of Scotland and Ireland, amount probably to more than a third of the whole territory ; nor is it a want of fertility in those lands, but it is the mischief of being in hands that will neither cultivate them themselves, nor yet let others. A man may in New York, &c. have land in fee-simple for demanding it, and complying with certain reasonable con-

I 4

ditions,

ditions, which leave him absolute master of the soil for ever. In Britain he may apply for waste land, and he will be answered that he shall have a lease of 21 years, perhaps only of 7 or 14; and upon such a lease he is to build, without a stick of timber, and enter into very great expences: this at once banishes the scheme in any prudent person, and makes any common husbandry more profitable. Thus is it found, that when the wastes in a country are in private hands, they are like to remain so, except what a few sensible active individuals do upon their own estates, which bears scarcely any proportion to the quantity that remains waste. This is of most pernicious influence upon the public good, which is so intimately concerned in all wastes being cultivated. No man ought in such a wealthy, industrious country as Britain, where every product of the earth bears such an high price, to be allowed to keep waste lands in his possession above a certain number of years; if by a given time they are not in culture, or at least a considerable part of them, and the work going on, then they ought to be forfeit and assigned in the American manner to whoever will comply with the terms of the grant. Doubtless, this will appear
to

to the generality of the people in this country as a very wild scheme; and so it may be, but nevertheless the evil is not less real, nor does it less demand a remedy. Were the wastes of Britain to be granted away in small portions, in the same manner as those of America, we should see them peopled, and as well cultivated as the rest of the kingdom; notwithstanding the general want of timber on them, and their not being equal in fertility to the woodlands of America. And here I must further observe, that this state of the case shews the great reasonableness, and even importance of strenuously insisting on the new and old settlers in all parts of the continent, performing their conditions of taking no more land than they people in the required proportion. Letting any persons take up more land than they can moderately people, is bringing the same mischievous consequence on America, that we experience in Britain; for the wastes in America that are private property, are of little more use to the public than if they did not exist.

The account of a settlement given above, is not to be supposed a picture of the profit, which every one makes by going to New York; I would on no account, have it
 imagined

imagined that this is the case: this was executed by means of a large sum of money, for so 3000l. must be reckoned in America; and not only by a sum of money, but also by the exertion of much better husbandry than is common in the colonies. So far from every settler making a profit like this, not one in forty equals the proportion of it. In general, the settlers come with a small sum of money, very many of them with none at all, depending on their labour for three, five, or seven years to gain them a sum sufficient for taking a plantation, which is the common case of the foreign emigrants of all sorts. It is common to see men demand, and have grants of land, who have no substance to fix themselves further than cash for the fees of taking up the land; a gun, some powder and shot, a few tools, and a plough; they maintain themselves the first year, like the Indians, with their guns, and nets; and afterwards by the same means with the assistance of their lands; the labour of their farms, they perform themselves, even to being their own carpenters and smiths: by this means, people who may be said to have no fortunes, are enabled to live, and in a few years to maintain themselves and families

milies comfortably. But such people are not to be supposed to make a profit in cash of many years, nor do they want, or think of it. And as to the planters who begin their undertakings with small sums of money; though they do better, and even make a considerable profit by their business, yet are they very far from equalling what I have now described; this is for want of money, for I might add, that not one new settler in a thousand is possessed of a clear three thousand pounds.

The conclusion which I deduce from these particulars is, that new settlements in New York are undertaken to good advantage, profit in money considered, only by those who have a good sum of money ready to expend; and by this term, I mean particularly men who have from two to five thousand pounds clear; in Britain such people cannot from the amount of their fortune get into any valuable trade or manufacture, unless it is by mere interest, or being related to persons already in trade. But it is evident, that in New York, they may, with such a sum of money, take, clear, stock, and plant a tract of land that shall not only amply support them in all the necessaries of life, but at the same time
yield

yield a neat profit sufficient for the acquisition of a considerable fortune.

I shall next lay before the reader the exports of this province as taken on an average of three years since the peace.*

Flour and biscuit 250,000 barrels, at 20s.	£. 250,000
Wheat 70,000 qrs. - - - - -	70,000
Beans, pease, oats, Indian corn and other grains,	40,000
Salt beef, pork, hams, bacon, and venison,	18,000
Bees wax 30,000 lb. at 1s. - - - - -	1,500
Tongues, butter, and cheese - - - - -	8,000
Flax seed, 7000 hhds. at 40s. - - - - -	14,000
Horses and live stock - - - - -	17,000

Product of cultivated lands, - - - - -	418,500
--	---------

Timber planks, masts, boards, staves, and shingles - - - - -	} 25,000
Pot ash, 7000 hhds. - - - - -	
Ships built for sale, 20, at £700. - - - - -	14,000
Copper ore, and iron in bars and pigs - - - - -	20,000
	£. 526,000

Let me upon this table observe, that far the greater part of this export is the produce of the lands including timber; and even the metals may be reckoned in the same class; this shews us that agriculture in New York is of such importance as to support the most considerable part of the province without the assistance of either

* *American Traveller*, p. 73,

the fishery or of commerce ; not that the city of New York has not traded largely, perhaps equal to Boston, but the effects of that trade have been chiefly the introduction of money by the means of barter, besides the exportation of their own products : whereas New England's exports consist five parts in six of fish, and the other products of the fishery ; a strong proof that agriculture is far more profitable in one country, than in the other ; for settlers in colonies will never take to the sea, in a country whose agriculture yields well ; but in very bad climates, and such as destroy instead of cherishing the products of the earth, any branch of industry pays better than cultivating the earth. This is a distinction that ought to be decisive with those who have a choice to make which of these colonies they will go to ; for men do not usually settle themselves in countries where they are to make their livelihood by encountering a boisterous sea, and leading a life of perpetual hardships and violent labour : This is very different from the employment of those who support themselves in so fine a country as New York, by agriculture.

C H A P.

C H A P. X.

Propositions for the improvement of the husbandry of New York—Bad management—Better system—Vines—Winter food of cattle, &c.

THE rural management in most parts of this province is miserable: seduced by the fertility of the soil on first settling, the farmers think only of exhausting it as soon as possible, without attending to their own interest in a future day: this is a degree of blindness which in sensible people one may fairly call astonishing. The general system is to crop their fields with corn, till they are absolutely exhausted; then they leave them, what they call fallow, that is, to run to weeds for several years, till they think the soil has recovered somewhat of its fertility, when they begin again with corn, in succession, as long as it will bear any, leaving it afterwards to a fallow of weeds. If no spontaneous growth came, but such as cattle would freely eat, the evil would not be great,

great, because then the land would not have more to support than it would gain by the dung, &c. of the stock supported. But the contrary is the case: an infinite quantity of rubbish comes which no beast will touch, this feeds the land in so constant a succession, that the soil is never without a large crop on it. The extent to which this practice is carried would astonish any person used to better husbandry: it is owing to the plenty of land; the farmers, instead of keeping all their grounds in good order, and a due succession of valuable crops, depend on new land for every thing, and are regardless of such management as would make their old fields equal the value of the new ones.

Instead of this, the New York farmers should imitate the conduct of those of Britain: they should never *exhaust* their lands; and when they were only *out of order* they should give them what ought to be esteemed the most beneficial fallow; that is, crops which, while growing, receive great culture, at the same time that they do not much exhaust the soil; such as all sorts of roots, and pulse, and every kind of leguminous plant, with the various kinds of clovers. By introducing these in proper
suc-

succession, the land is never exhausted. In the remarkable instance given of a plantation managed on this system, we find a crop of this nature introduced between every two of maize, wheat, barley, or oats, and in every round of the system, several years under clover, which is instead of the fallow of weeds of the generality of the New York farmers.

The benefit of pursuing this plan is very great; for the lands, when laid down to clovers, maintain more cattle on fifty acres than with weeds they would on four hundred; this quantity of cattle improves the ground by the summer feeding, and enables the farmer to raise great store of manure in the winter, by which means his crops of corn, &c. are by much more abundant. It further keeps the whole plantation in a state of profit; whereas in the common method only a part, and that not the largest, is valuable at once, his dependence for product being only on the new broken up-lands.

Another part of husbandry, in which the New York farmers are very defective, is the management of their meadows and pastures: they make it a rule to mow every acre that is possible for hay; and as long

long as they get a tolerable *quantity*, they are strangely inattentive to the quality; weeds, rushes, flags, and all sorts of rubbish, they call good hay, and suppose their cattle have not more sense in distinguishing than themselves. This is owing also to their grasping mere extent of land, and caring but little for the good husbandry of it. Many of their meadows are marshes, which, with little trouble, might be drained, and at once improved prodigiously, yet are such undertakings very seldom set about: others of the up-land sort are equally filled with various weeds, from the slovenly manner in which they are laid down, or left to clothe themselves; but the appearance of these do not at all startle men whose ideas of agriculture are so little polished.

In respect to the management of cattle, and the raising manure, the farmers of New York are equally inattentive with their neighbours of New England.

I before observed, that vines of several sorts grew spontaneously in all the woods of this province; and that wine, though bad, had been made of them: their being bad has no weight with me, since wild vines in no part of the world produce good

wine; but if they would plant vineyards of them, and cultivate them with the same care as is taken in wine countries, I have no doubt but they would produce excellent wine. Some endeavours have been made in this branch, by several patriotic persons in this province; but they have all been on the scent of bringing vines from other countries, scarce any of which ever thrive, and some of them will not live: the frosts are so excessive cold in winter, that these foreign vines, used to so different a climate, either come to nothing, or produce a grape very different from what they do in their own country. The instance of the great success with which the Dutch planted French vines at the Cape of Good Hope, proves nothing in this case, because the climate in general, at that Cape, is not only one of the finest in the world, but the winters are mild, and in every respect different from the peculiar climate of North America.

But good culture, and a proper choice of a high dry situation, of which there are plenty in this province, and even rocky ones, would in all probability be attended with success, and make these native grapes yield a wine that would add infinitely to the

the value of the exports of the province. This is an object of too much importance to be left to the dilatory proceedings of the planters themselves; they are in general engaged in a plain line of husbandry, from which most of them have not the rapacity or knowledge to deviate, and the rest want money for it. But the government should order a vineyard to be planted under the direction of an overseer skilled in this branch of agriculture, and also by the same means take care that it was cultivated in perfection. The expence of this would not be great.

C H A P. XI.

N E W J E R S E Y.

Climate, soil, and productions of New Jersey — Agriculture — Defects — Improvements proposed — The people.

THE climate of New Jersey much resembles that in the southern parts of New York; they have sharp frosts in the winter, though rather less so than in that province, and the heat is sometimes very great in summer; but the air is clear, dry, and pure, and much superior to the more southern sea coasts, where are many swamps; in New Jersey scarce any of these are to be found, and consequently it is much the more healthy to the inhabitants.

There is another difference in the climate of these two provinces, which has an intimate connection with husbandry, the winters being so much milder, as to allow the cattle being left out all winter. Mr. Kalm took notice of this (which I before remarked was not the custom in New York.)

Not-

Notwithstanding, says he, it snowed several days and nights together, and the snow lay six inches high upon the ground, yet all the cattle are obliged to stay, day and night, in the fields, during the whole winter. For neither the English nor the Swedes had any stables, but the Germans and the Dutch had preserved the custom of their country, and generally kept their cattle in stables during winter. Almost all the old Swedes say, that on their first arrival in this country, they made stables for their cattle, as is usual in Sweden; but as the English came and settled among them, and left their cattle in the fields all winter, as is customary in England, they left off their former custom, and adopted the English one. They owned, however, that the cattle suffered greatly in winter, when it was very cold, especially when it froze after rain; and that some cattle were killed by it in several places, in the long winter of the year 1741. About noon the cattle went into the woods, where there were yet some leaves on the young oak; but they did not eat the leaves, and only bit off the extremities of the branches, and the tops of the youngest oaks. The horses went into the maize fields, and ate the dry

leaves on the few stalks which remained. The sheep ran about the woods and on the corn-fields. The chickens perched on the trees of the gardens at night, for they had no particular habitation. The hogs were likewise exposed to the roughness of the weather within a small inclosure*.

The soil in general is sandy, and upon the whole inferior in fertility to both New York and Pennsylvania; it is an error in several writers, who have treated of the agriculture, &c. of these provinces, to class them together; for the soil on the sides of the river Delaware, which parts this province from Pennsylvania, is quite different; on the New Jersey side it is all sandy, and on the other side it is loam and clay.

The products are the same with those of New York, both in corn, and roots, and fruit, excepting that pease are found to thrive much better in the latter; and the peaches of New Jersey are of a finer flavour than those of New York.

On the most sandy parts of the province, and which to appearance are very poor, they cultivate maize to advantage; and on

* *Kalm's Travels into North America*, Vol. II. p. 51.

this land it grows eight feet high ; but in the cultivation of it they are very inattentive to its nature ; sowing rye broad cast between the rows, which precludes that weeding and hoeing, which is so necessary to this plant. The asparagus plant is a common weed in maize plantations here, which, sowing rye, prevents the farmer from eradicating. Others, yet more slovenly, mark out the hillock for sowing the maize, and leave the intervals of five or six feet untouched. About New Brunswick, Amboy, &c. and many tracts on the river Rariton, the soil is much richer, and the maize is finer : about this part the country is in general beautifully variegated, and almost entirely cultivated.

Buck-wheat is very generally cultivated in New Jersey, they find it pays them even as well as wheat, by its superior produce : they never give any other preparation to the land for it than one or two ploughings, and harrow in the seed, about a bushel and half to the acre, which yields them, if the season is wet, for dry years do not suit it, from 30 or 40 bushels on good land, and very seldom less than 28. They make bread, or, more properly speaking, cakes of it, which are eaten by every body, but its

principal uses here, as in Europe, are for fattening poultry and hogs.

Rye is a common crop in New Jersey, which is rather surprising, for wheat yields as good products. What is extraordinary, the farmers in this country sow less seed rye than in England, where two bushels are the common quantity for an acre, but here they sow only one; they commonly receive twenty in return. Barley is cultivated in common over the whole province; they sow two bushels an acre, and receive from 30 to 50 bushels; this seems to be the grain which thrives better in the province than any of the European ones.

All the bread-corn of this country yields sufficient, in the very worst seasons, to feed the inhabitants; and not only to feed them, but at a reasonable and equable price: the bread eat by the lowest ranks, whether of maize, wheat, or rye, is of the finest sort that can be gained from the grain; nor is the crop in general ever known so scanty as materially to affect the market price, which is greatly owing to the constant and regular exportation which always goes forward.

Cabbages are lately cultivated here by almost every planter in the province, the
sort

fort is the great white winter cabbage ; it is not found only in gardens, but whole fields of it are common ; it is eat in large quantities in every family, but the cows get no slight portion of the crop ; for hogs also they are much esteemed. There are no tracts of good land in this province, without having portions assigned to the culture of hemp ; which does extraordinary well here. To the north of New Jersey, the pieces sown with this plant are but small, but here, large fields of it are every where to be seen, which is a prospect that ought not a little to endear us to this country, for no staple produced in America, not even sugar, is more valuable. Unfortunately they nowhere produce more than is sufficient for home consumption ; but this I apprehend, is owing to a want of sufficient encouragement ; no object can demand it more, or pay us better for it, yet has not the legislature hit upon the proper effective means for extending the culture, so as the mother country, as well as the navigation of New York and Philadelphia, may profit by it : an object which one cannot apprehend so difficult as this negligence might make us believe.

In

In the most southern parts of the province, saffron is commonly planted; but the drug produced is not reckoned so good as that which is the product of England: this is not to be attributed to either soil or climate, for both suit it in an extraordinary degree; but they are not careful enough in the culture, nor in the manufacture of the commodity after it is produced: they do not weed the crops with that assiduous care which the planters of Cambridgeshire and Flanders exert, and which seems to be essential to the success; nor are they equally attentive to curing, drying, and caking of it.

They have, in various parts of New Jersey many tracts of meadow land, much of which is marshy; they mow them twice a year, about the latter end of May, and the end of August or beginning of September; they get large crops of hay, some yield three tons an acre at the two mowings, but it is of a coarse sort: however the produce is of great value in a country where the general fault is the not laying in store of winter provision for cattle. But there is a general fault here in the management of all grass lands, which is letting poor and indifferent sorts of grass occupy ground that would yield much better sorts: the marshes produce

duce nothing but the *Carex*. Another circumstance which should not be forgotten, is the planters neglecting the artificial grasses, which they might have upon their uplands, from their dependence upon these marshes; this has another bad consequence in making the farmers adopt a worse system than they otherwise would; for such farmers as have some marsh land, have no notion of sowing the clovers upon their arable fields, by way of a fallow; which one would suppose they must do, rather than leave them to rest without any other crop than weeds. This dependence on marsh land, however, by no means proves answerable to their cattle, for in no province are all the four-footed animals worse treated.

Every farm in New Jersey has a large orchard belonging to it, some of them of a size far surpassing any thing in England. The common fruits are apples and peaches, with some cherries and pears; the peaches are of a fine flavour, and in such amazing plenty that the whole stock of hogs on a farm eat as many as they will, and yet the quantity that rot under the trees, is astonishing. Apples are not suffered to go to such waste as they make cyder in vast quantities, and also export them by ship-loads to
the

the West Indies. This favourable climate to fruit is a circumstance of great importance to all ranks of people, especially the lower ones that settle there; since it gives them a plenty of one article of food, very wholesome in this climate, without the least expence or trouble. Water melons also are in such plenty, that there is not a farmer, or even a cottager without a piece of ground planted with them: in some parts of the province they have whole fields of these and gourds. The country people eat them as they do in Naples and the Ecclesiastical State, at all times of the day while they are at their labour, when thirsty; in the same manner as a labourer in England would drink ale or small beer; with this difference, that the fruit never intoxicates, and if taken with any tolerable moderation is perfectly wholesome.

In a word, I must observe, that the plenty of all the productions of nature which contribute to the food of mankind, which abounds in this province, is equal to what can be expected or wished for by any one: this is owing to the regularity of the summer season; the summer frosts are of no account, they have no cold nights, the rains are not excessive, nor are they hardly
ever

ever troubled with a drought; these important circumstances are of such effect, that the farmers are reaping or gathering some crop or other in every month from May to November.

In respect of timber, their woods yield them all the trees that are found to the northward: with the circumstance of being plentifully stored with some of the most valuable sorts; among these the white cedar figures particularly; being the most useful of all their trees. They use it in building preferably to oak, from its lasting longer, and the shingles made of it surpass all others; they are more durable at the same time that they are lighter, circumstances invaluable in shingles, where they have scarcely any other covering to their houses. All the churches, and the houses of the principal people have no other roofs. Of this tree is also made the best rails for fencing; nor are the posts of it bad, as it long resists putrefaction; great numbers of hoops are also made of it, and likewise staves. But considering the value of this tree, the people of New Jersey are very deficient in their care of it; the farmers and settlers seem to make little account of it, but destroy all with the same relentless severity

severity that is common throughout all our colonies. The sassafras is much less valuable, yet they leave that standing singly about their cleared fields.

Having thus particularized the principal products of the country, I shall, in the next place, offer a few remarks on the defects in the management of the farmers which are most striking; since it is only by properly attending to these, that future improvements are to be expected. First I shall observe, that their culture of maize deserves much reprehension: so luxuriant a vegetable demands great attention in the management while growing, particularly in the articles of keeping the plants quite clean from weeds, and ploughing the spaces between the rows often enough to keep them fine and well pulverized; instead of which I have before observed, that they sow rye in them, or else leave them to a crop of weeds; this is miserable management, and such as tends strongly to keep the ground in that bad state, which is a general enemy to all improvement; maize is of itself a very exhausting plant, and requires all the nourishment that can be given to it, this nourishment is not manure only, but the hoeings and ploughings which surround the

plant that keep the land loose, and kill all the weeds, and for this purpose there is no article of culture that is better adapted than one which will admit being planted at the distance of six or eight feet *square* ; for if the rows only were so far asunder, and the plants thicker together, they then could receive only the common horse hoeing, which would not be near so efficacious : it was certainly with this intention that good farmers first used this method of planting, nor could there well be a greater perversion of the method than keeping to the distances, and instead of ploughing, cropping them with rye.

I need not observe here, that in all countries one great principle of husbandry is the procuring and using as much dung and manure as possible ; the farmers of New Jersey cannot raise hemp for exportation in large quantities, for want of more manure ; yet do they give into one practice which is very negligent : they leave the straw of most the buck-wheat they cultivate about their fields in heaps, they find their cattle will not eat it, and so think there is no other use for it ; but surely these men might reflect on the importance of *litter*, as well as *food* for cattle ; in the consumption of their hay

8

and

and other straw they might certainly use far more than they have, or perhaps can have; but to possess it on their own farms without using it, is unpardonable; nor is it a universal practice, which keeps the whole country in countenance, for there are some planters who have better ideas, use all their straw carefully for litter; and the advantage which these men reap from the practice ought surely to make the rest follow their example. There is no error in husbandry of worse consequence than not being sufficiently solicitous about manure; it is this error that makes the planters in New Jersey, and our other colonies, seem to have but one object, which is ploughing up fresh land. The case is, they exhaust the old as fast as possible till it will bear nothing more, and then, not having manure to replenish it, nothing remains but taking new land to serve in the same manner. Whereas would they be properly attentive, raising as much manure as possible, at the same time that they introduced their crops in a proper system, so as to keep the land clean and in heart; in this case they would find no such necessity of changing the soil: and by the use of clovers in the manner they are sown in Britain, all their lands would be in profit,

fit, and perhaps equally profitable; instead of which they have now only a part under the plough that pays them any thing, and the rest are over-run with weeds and trumpery. One would imagine that the error of such a conduct would soon be discovered and rectified of itself; but the American planters and farmers are in general the greatest slovens in christendom; plenty of land ruins their husbandry in every respect of general conduct—neatness—good management—spirited attempts, &c. Kalm confirms these observations, and carries the cause back to the first coming of the settlers; he says, “After the inhabitants have converted a tract of land into fields which had been a forest for many centuries together, and which consequently had a very fine soil, they use it as such, as long as it will bear any corn; and when it ceases to bear any, they turn it into pasture for the cattle (*that is, leave it to whatever spontaneous growth of weeds comes*) and take new corn-fields in another place where a fine soil can be met with, and where it has never been made use of for this purpose. This kind of agriculture will do for some time; but it will afterwards have bad consequences, as every one may clearly see. The depth and rich-

ness of the soil they found here who came over from England (as they were preparing land for ploughing which had been covered with woods from times immemorial) mislead even the English, and made them careless husbandmen. It is well known that the Indians lived in this country for several centuries before the Europeans came into it; but it is likewise known that they lived chiefly by hunting and fishing and had hardly any fields. They planted maize, and some species of beans and gourds, and at the same time, it is certain that a plantation of such vegetables as serve an Indian family during one year, take up no more ground than a farmer in our country (*Sweden*) takes to plant cabbage for his family upon, at least a farmer's cabbage and turnep ground taken together is always as extensive, if not more so than the corn-fields and kitchen gardens of an Indian family. Therefore the Indians could hardly subsist for one month upon the produce of their gardens and fields. Commonly, the little villages of the Indians are about twelve or eighteen miles distant from each other. From hence one may judge how little ground was formerly employed for corn-fields, and the rest was overgrown with thick and tall trees; and

and though they cleared, as it is usual, new ground as soon as the old one had quite lost its fertility, yet such little pieces as they made use of were very inconsiderable when compared with the vast forests which remained. Thus the upper fertile soil increased considerably, for centuries together; and the Europeans, coming to America, found a rich and fine soil before them, lying as loose between the trees as the best bed in a garden. They had nothing to do but to cut down the wood, put it up in heaps, and to clear the dead leaves away. They could then immediately proceed to ploughing, which in such loose ground is very easy; and having sown their corn, they got a most plentiful harvest. This easy method of getting a rich crop has spoiled the English and other European inhabitants, and induced them to adopt the same method of agriculture which the Indians make use of; that is, to sow uncultivated grounds as long as they will produce a crop without manuring, but to turn them into pastures as soon as they can bear no more, and to take in hand new spots of ground covered since time immemorial with woods, which have been spared by the fire or the hatchet ever since the creation. This is likewise the

reason why agriculture and the knowledge of this useful branch is so imperfect here, that one can learn nothing on a large tract of land, neither of the English nor of the Swedes, Germans, Dutch, and French, except that, from their gross mistakes and carelessness for futurity, one finds opportunities every day of making all sorts of observations, and of growing wise at the expence of other people. In a word, the corn-fields, the meadows, the cattle, &c. are treated with equal carelessness, and the English nation so well skilled in these branches of husbandry is with difficulty found out here. We can hardly be more lavish of our woods in Sweden and Finland than they are here: their eyes are fixed upon the present gain, and they are blind to futurity. Every day their cattle are harassed by labour, and each generation decreases in goodness and size, by being kept short of food as I have before mentioned. On my travels in this country, I observed several plants which the horses and cows preferred to all others: they were wild in this country, and likewise grew well on the driest and poorest ground, and where no other plants would succeed. But the inhabitants did not know how to turn this to their advantage,

vantage, owing to the little account made of natural history, that science being here (as in other parts of the world) looked upon as a mere trifle, and the pastime of fools. I am certain, and my certainty is founded upon experience, that by means of these plants, in the space of a few years, I have been able to turn the poorest ground, which would hardly afford food for a cow, into the richest and most fertile meadow, where great flocks of cattle have found superfluous food, and are grown fat upon. I own that these useful plants were not to be found on the grounds of every planter; but with a small share of natural knowledge, a man would easily collect them in the places where they were to be got. I was astonished when I heard the country people complaining of the badness of the pastures; but I likewise perceived their negligence, and often saw excellent plants growing on their grounds which only required a little more attention and assistance from their unexperienced owners."

The principal improvements wanting in the agriculture of this province, are the introduction of such general good management upon the common crops of the farmers, as to enable them to raise a

staple on some parts of each farm ; suppose hemp and flax : at present their conduct is in general so bad, that very many planters cannot raise an acre of hemp, &c. this is owing to the neglects which prevail so much throughout their management ; and especially to the badness of their systems : On the contrary, they should adopt the best British husbandry of introducing crops which yield both winter and summer food for cattle, between such as are found most to exhaust the land ; an idea, which would in the execution, bring with it a remedy for almost all the inconveniencies they feel at present, suppose they proceed in some such system as this :

1. Maize,
2. Roots for winter food of cattle, or
cabbage,
3. Barley or oats,
4. Clovers,
5. Wheat,
6. Buck-wheat,
7. Barley or oats,
8. Roots,
9. Roots,
10. Hemp ;

varied in different fields, so that the total quantities of each article might be proportioned

portioned to the size of the plantation. Two crops of roots both well manured would be a preparation that would bring hemp on all the good and tolerable land in New Jersey. In this system dung would not be wanting, because there is so much food for cattle cultivated, that great flocks might be kept, which with a due management of litter would enable the planter to keep his fields always in heart, instead of the seventh crop of barley, perhaps maize might be thrown in again: it is true, it is a great exhauster, but then it yields such an immense quantity of excellent fodder, that, with a proper attention to cattle and dung, I don't know whether it may not more than make amends for that quality. The reader will observe, that if this system is changed for such as are common in Jersey, of corn in succession till a piece of land is worn out, so far from being able to have a portion in hemp, they cannot plainly do well even by their corn, since only the first crops on a piece of new land enjoy a tolerable preparation. Nothing but such an improvement in the general management of common husbandry in our old colonies, can ever make hemp an article of exportation in them: and a circumstance which is conti-

nually acting even against that, is the vast increase of people, which has of late years so raised the price of grain among them, as to make the culture of it much more profitable than formerly; this perhaps may rise higher still, and if that is the case, it may come to be more profitable than even hemp; which is not so rich a product to the farmer as those may think, who consider only the many hundred thousand pounds that are paid by England for it. Hemp is not near equal to tobacco in profit.

The inhabitants of this province consist almost entirely of planters; and though there are many considerable estates for that country among them, yet in general they are little freeholds, cultivated by the owners; they have no town of any note, New York and Philadelphia being their places of export and import, Perth Amboy not being yet considerable; this circumstance keeps them very much at home and pretty free from luxury, that is from the pleasures of a capital: they live in a very plentiful manner, which indeed they could hardly fail of doing in so plentiful a country; for no where on the coast are the necessities of life in greater plenty. Fish, flesh, fowl, and fruits, every little farmer
has

has at his table in a degree of profusion ; and the lower classes, such as servants and labourers, artisans, and mechanics in the villages are all very well clothed and fed ; better than the same people in Britain. Tea, coffee, and chocolate, among the lowest ranks, are almost as common as tea in England ; they are universal articles in every farmer's house, and even among the poor.

C H A P. XII.

P E N S Y L V A N I A.

*Climate of Pensylvania—Soil—Productions
—Agriculture—Defects—Improvements.*

THE climate of Pensylvania has a strong distinction between the maritime and back parts; the former, for near a hundred miles, is much like New Jersey, or rather hotter; but the latter is more temperate and pleasant, neither so cold in winter, nor so hot in summer, being in all respects as agreeable and healthy a climate as can any where be found in America. The heat in this province is not sufficient for rice, nor is there that plenty of swamp land (happily for the inhabitants) that is found more to the south; tobacco grows well in many parts of it, yet did it never become a staple, not however owing to the climate, for in Canada they have some tobacco. But for wheat and all kinds of plants, cultivated in Europe, with fruits, few parts of America exceed the back country of Pensylvania; that is to say,

say, the hilly (not the mountainous) tracts. The air is very clear and healthy ; the sky serene ; and in general the climate agrees perfectly well with European constitutions. In the worst parts of the province, the winters, though severe, considering the latitude, do not generally last above two months, that is, the season of frost and snow. In summer, the heats here are great, and almost without intermission ; but in the hilly parts these heats are, as I before observed much moderated : it is owing to this warm sun, that melons, water-melons, pumpions, and other fruits which here require hot-beds, and some that cannot be raised with them, grow abroad, and in the common fields in a plenty, and of a flavour much superior to what is found more to the northwards ; and though no better treated than turneps, they are ripe so early as July. Cherries are ripe by the twenty-fifth of May, and wheat is commonly reaped before the end of June. The months of September, part of October, April, May, and the first half of June, are the fine and agreeable months in this country.

A considerable part of the soil of this province is a sand, or light sandy loam ; these prevail chiefly in the maritime parts ;
with

with variations however, for in some large tracts it is a strong loam, and in others clay. In the back parts of the province there are immense tracts of a black mould, and rich loam; and in general the new forest land has several inches, whatever may be the soil, of a light black mould, which is certainly formed in long process of time, by the putrefaction of vegetable substances. The finest parts of the province are the level tracts that join upon the Allegany mountains.

The productions of this country, in corn, timber, and fruits, are nearly the same as those of the Jerseys; only exceeding them in quality and plenty. Vines are in greater abundance, and mulberry trees among the most common in the province. The fruits are finer, and if any thing in greater plenty: hogs are frequently fattened with peaches; for in the orchards they fall in such quantities, that great numbers are left to rot upon the ground.

Wood grows very scarce near Philadelphia, however plentiful it may be in the remoter parts of Pennsylvania: the first settlers, with the usual foresight of the Americans, destroyed the timber, as if it was impossible they should ever want any; which,

which, with the continued consumption ever since, for building, firing, and by iron works, have so lessened it, that wood is almost as dear at Philadelphia, as it is in some parts of Britain; indeed in winter, firing is one of the most expensive articles of housekeeping in that capital. The best fuel here is the hickory, a species of the walnut; then they prefer the white and black oaks. Notwithstanding the want of wood here, there are not far from Philadelphia some very considerable woods; but being the private property of people of fortune, they were reserved for many years, in expectation of that high price which the commodity now fetches. Within these ten years much has been felled, but there yet remains large tracts full of very fine timber, which is every day cutting down.

In the productions commonly cultivated, wheat is the grand article of the province. They sow immense quantities, about the latter end of September generally; rising from two to three bushels of seed an acre, which on good lands yield from 25 to 32 bushels per acre; on fields of inferior quality, or such as are almost exhausted by yielding corn, they get from 15 to 25 bushels,

bushels, and sometimes not so much as 15, but this never happens without its being owing to previous bad management. Some few planters have summer fallow for wheat, in the English manner, but the common preparation is the ground lying what they call fallow, which is the same management as that of Jersey and New York; viz. leaving the land, after it is exhausted by yielding corn, to recover itself under a crop of spontaneous growth, weeds or whatever trumpery comes: or else they sow it in succession, after wheat or other corn. It is owing to this general bad management that they get not greater crops; for in the back parts of the province are as fine lands for yielding this grain as any in the world; but soil alone will not do, good culture is no less requisite.

Nor is it to be forgotten here, for one should not praise or condemn in wholesale, that some planters have introduced the English way of sowing wheat on clover lays, which has been found one of the greatest improvements that ever were introduced; for by this husbandry, the lands, at a smaller expence than usual, are made to yield much better crops. I may also remark, that this most beneficial practice

en-

encreases in Pennsylvania. It is to be attributed to more enlightened knowledge spreading in the province, from the voyages to Britain being more frequent, and from books of husbandry being more read in proportion to the encrease of wealth and luxury: the same causes will doubtless by and by operate, however gradually, in introducing other practices, which in Europe have been found beneficial. I have been informed, that a gentleman in the back parts of this province, has introduced the culture of wheat by the drill plough, which was invented by Mr. Tull, an English writer, and since perfected in France by M. du Hamel: it answered greatly; but the culture of maize is the completest horse-hoeing husbandry of all others.

They sow large quantities of rye on their sandy lands, and on other fields, when they are exhausted with wheat; rye is reckoned to pay them in some parts of the province, as well as wheat.

Barley is also a common grain in this country, though not so general as in Britain, where it yields the universal drink of all ranks of people; whereas in Pennsylvania, the quantities of cyder made is prodigious, and rum is consumed in great quan-

quantities; not however that beer is unknown, on the contrary they make much, and cultivate hops also with success. Of barley they sow four or five bushels on an English acre, generally in April, and it is ripe the end of July. Oats are managed in the same manner: the preparation for both these grains is common with that of wheat, save their giving wheat the preference in soil, and earliness in the system. They sow them on the American fallow of weeds; after one another, and very often after wheat and maize. Barley yields, on good land, from 30 to 40 bushels, and on bad from 20 to 25. Near the Allegany mountains, on some fresh land, from 50 to 65 bushels of barley have been known; a crop often exceeded in England, where good management more than ballances the advantages of soil and climate; 35 bushels of oats are reckoned a very good crop.

Maize is not cultivated in such quantities in some parts of Pennsylvania, as in more northern colonies, where wheat is not so common. Here is a field of it near every farm house, but small in proportion to what is found in New Jersey, New York, &c. for the plain reason, that they cannot raise wheat to equal advantage. But in
some

some parts of this province, particularly the sandy ones, there are large quantities; they cultivate it nearly on the same principles as in New Jersey, that is, in a most incomplete manner: for even rye is sometimes sown in the intervals, which is such a piece of bad husbandry, as ought to be banished by every man who would pride himself on having ideas of modern culture. Wheat thriving so well in Pennsylvania, makes them neglect maize; which is a much less valuable grain: this is a distinction which should always be made; it is not that maize is not a profitable crop in itself, but their lands will yield one which is much more beneficial. This will be the better understood, when I add, that Indian corn yields but 2s. 7d. a bushel, when wheat is at 7s. 6d. both Pennsylvania currency; a difference that at once accounts for the preference in a country that will yield wheat.

Much greater quantities of hemp and flax are raised in this colony than in any to the northward: this is owing to a more favourable climate, and to a better soil; for in the parts of Pennsylvania, adjoining to the Allegany mountains, are very large tracts of land, which are as favourable to

the production of these plants as can be wished: it is not want of good land in certain quantities, nor of climate, that prevents the export of hemp, but the demand for it at Philadelphia, which exceeds, for home consumption, what the province can raise. Improvements might be made, of which more hereafter, that would enable Pennsylvania to export hemp; but without a change in certain branches of rural œconomy, they never will raise this commodity for exportation. A people increasing at such an amazing rate, makes the necessaries of life so dear, that no other husbandry answers so well, that is, they possess not a staple that will pay them for a neglect of wheat and common provisions. Hemp and flax would be as proper ones as could be proposed to this colony, but they do not pay well enough to make them such objects as tobacco is in Virginia; and while that is the case, we may be certain it will never be planted. Of flax seed there goes annually to Ireland large quantities.

And here I should remark, that they have in this province a native flax, which promises to be a treasure. It is a sort of *dogs-bane*. The country people use

use it instead of flax, for various domestic purposes ; preparing the stalks of it in the same manner as we prepare flax or hemp. They spin and weave several kinds of stuffs of it : it was of this plant that the Indians made a kind of linen bags, fishing net twine, and other manufactures, long before the Europeans settled on this continent. It is an idea which ought to be pursued ; what is at present used, is nothing but the quantity gathered wild as a weed ; why not take the hint, and make it an article of culture ? I have not a doubt but it would succeed well, and answer all the purposes of the real flax, with this infinite advantage, that it is congenial to the climate, and consequently would thrive far better than flax, which has been imported here from Europe. Nothing can argue less attention to the agriculture of these colonies, than overlooking the natural productions of the continent, in favour of the transplanted ones, which it would be folly to suppose could thrive so well ; for the climate of North America is quite peculiar : even in the southern latitude of Philadelphia, which in Europe hardly knows what a frost is, the cold is so severe, that ships cannot stir from that

port for at least one month of the winter. Let us compare this with the same parallel in Europe, and we shall find the amazing difference of the two hemispheres. This ought to teach them the value of those productions, which are indigenous in the country : hemp, flax, and vines, are all instances, and striking ones.

Cabbages and turneps are commonly cultivated in Pensylvania, partly for the table, and partly for cattle, but by no means for the latter in the quantities they ought to be : they raise both of an immense size, and without any very extraordinary culture, though they seldom attempt them without dung. One reason why they are bad husbandmen, in this respect, is the favourableness of the climate, which is such as to allow cattle to be out all winter, and to pick up their living in the woods ; such a circumstance must necessarily render the farmers negligent in raising winter food for cattle, which for so many reasons is a point in husbandry so necessary in all sorts of countries, since none I ever yet heard of, is, from heat of climate alone, so rich as to dispense with the want of dung. Another great disadvantage of this neglect of turneps and cabbages, is the want of them

among

among the successive crops of corn which the Pennsylvania farmers crowd upon their land in much too quick a succession.

Mulberry trees are among the most common productions of the province of Pennsylvania; indeed, they are so plentiful, that silk might be made in any quantities, provided the country was populous enough; but agriculture answers so much better in a country where land is had almost for nothing, that people cannot make profit by silk worms; at least they think so: yet for curiosity, some families have kept them, and wound off large quantities of silk, more than sufficient to shew that any quantities might be made, if the people could or would find time for the business. Nor do I think that any employment of their time would pay them better; especially considering that six weeks in a year is all that is required for making silk.

Buck-wheat is not so commonly cultivated in Pennsylvania, as more to the northward; what the reason for this is I know not, since it agrees perfectly well with the climate, and produces larger crops than in New York: perhaps they find wheat so much more profitable than any other pro-

duct, that they cultivate it on land, which more to the northward would be differently employed. They sow about a bushel and half to the acre, which yields sometimes more than forty bushels, but generally from 30 to 36.

In several parts of Pennsylvania, they are very well acquainted with the husbandry of watering meadow lands, by conducting brooks over them; which they do in a very artificial manner, bringing the water in little streams along the sides of the hills, and letting it into the meadows at command. By this management, which agrees wonderfully in so hot a climate, they mow three crops a year, whereas without water they would mow them but once, and at that mowing not get so much as by the worst of the present three. This is an improvement well known in many parts of Europe, particularly on the Thames in England; in Flanders, in Lombardy, and in several of the provinces of Spain, but it is no where practised to more advantage than in Pennsylvania; which is surprising, considering the very low state in which most other parts of husbandry is found.

Many of the planters, especially in the back parts of the province, where the wild
tracts

tracts are adjoining, keep great stocks of cattle : some of them have from forty to sixty horses ; and four or five hundred head of horned cattle, oxen, cows, bulls, calves, and young cattle ; they let them run through the woods, not only in summer, but also in winter ; which is a circumstance that makes them very inattentive to the providing winter food : sheep also they have in great numbers, and tho' the wool does not equal the best in England or Spain, yet is it much better than is produced in many of our counties, and makes cloth that answers exceedingly well for the general wear of the province, fine as well as coarse cloths ; and accordingly, almost all the farmers, and their servants, with the lower classes of other sorts, are clad in it ; they have no lands in the whole province but what do excellently for feeding sheep, even the very worst tracts maintain great numbers. Sheep are kept in such numbers, that wool might be a valuable article of exportation unwrought, and by a proper policy in the mother country, wool might become as good an import from the colonies as any other.

The farmers make their fences like those to the northward, of planks and posts ; but

in those parts of the province which have been long settled, wood is too scarce for this method, and they have substituted live hedges, not however with judgment, for they have taken the privet for this purpose, which badly answers it for want of spines; they have plenty of hawthorn, but have not yet sagacity to use it. They are in general, throughout the province, very careless of their fences, which is the consequence of having such plenty of land: considerable plantations, that are not yet all under culture, have no other ring fence than marks set upon the trees, so that the cattle turned into the woods may wander into those of other men, and others cattle make equal trespasses; and if the farm joins the wild country, it is the same. Some men are even so careless, that when they take in a new field for corn, they will plough, sow, and sometimes reap it before they go about the inclosure, submitting to the depredations of cattle, rather than have the trouble of fencing it. There is nothing can give a man, that only travels through a country, so bad an opinion of the husbandry of it, as to see two circumstances; first, the fences in bad order; and, secondly, the corn full of weeds. In many parts of Pennsylvania,

sylvania, a country in which nature has done so much, man will do so little, that both these are almost every where to be seen by every traveller.

Pensylvania is not without negroe slaves for cultivation, though the number bears no proportion to the white servants; it may also be proper to remark, that there are in this province, and it is the same in others, a difference in the white servants; they have, throughout the province, the same sort of servants that perform work in England, that is, hired by the year, in which case, they are washed, lodged, and boarded, but find their own cloaths; an able bodied man, in husbandry, will get from 10l. to 16l. a year sterling. Maids will will get so high as 5l. to 7l. Another sort of white servants, which are unknown in Britain, are the new settlers that are poor. Very many of these cannot even pay their passage from Europe, which amounts to 10l. sterling, and agree therefore with the captain of the ship, that he shall sell them for a certain number of years to be servants, in which case the farmers buy them, that is, pay their freight, &c. and this usually puts something also in the captain's pocket, beyond what he would

would otherwise have. If the passenger has some money, but not enough, he is then sold for a shorter time to make up the sum. There are laws in the province to regulate this kind of servitude, which seems very strange to us; the master is bound to feed, clothe, and use the servant as well as others. Others that have money enough to pay for their passage, especially Germans, yet will not pay, but choose to be sold in order to have time to gain a knowledge of the language and the manner of living in the country. Both these sorts of servants are greatly preferred to the common hiring method; for the wages do not amount to much more than half the other, and at the same time there is a security of keeping them, which with common servants is not the case; nor are these near so industrious. These distinctions in servitude are met with in our other colonies, but they do not occur so often, because for one new comer in them, there are twenty at Philadelphia.

The agriculture of the province is not equal to what the preceding productions would admit of; and to which they might be encouraged by soil, climate, and getting labour more plentifully than many other colonies. I have in two or three instances
mentioned

mentioned bad management, and shall in speaking of their general conduct shew others.

Their system which is a point of so much importance is like that I have mentioned more than once to the northward. They sow a piece of land with wheat till it will bear wheat no longer, then they sow barley on it till it will bear that no longer, and perhaps after that they will do the same by various crops of oats, buck-wheat, pease, &c. The following is the system that was pursued in a large new field in a plantation near Durham about fifty miles to the north of Philadelphia, the account was given me, among several others concerning the same plantation, by a person on whose accuracy I can depend.

1. Wheat,
2. Wheat,
3. Maize,
4. Wheat,
5. Wheat,
6. Barley,
7. Barley,
8. Barley,
9. Oats,
10. Barley,
11. Buck-wheat,
12. Barley,

- 12. Barley,
- 13. Oats,
- 14. Pease.

This is not only a proof of the planter's bad husbandry; it is also a proof of what excellent land it must be to yield such a succession of crops in plenty, enough to induce a man to sow them. After this system for fourteen years, it was left what they call a fallow for seven years more; that is, the land unploughed for whatever spontaneous growth comes; for some years there is nothing but weeds, but there afterwards appears some grasses thinly scattered which cattle eat, many sorts of shrubs and trees also spring up, which the cattle feed on also, and if the land was so to be left for twenty or thirty years longer, it would become a forest.

This absurd way of having an eye to nothing but exhausting the land as quick as possible by constant crops of corn, is pernicious to their interests: it is owing as I before said, to plenty of land, for new settlers always take up as much as they possible can, and far more than they know how to stock or cultivate: they can afford no care for manuring, nor yet to clear two pieces of ground for corn as long as one will

will bear it. They clear a field and have not strength of ploughs and cattle, and men to crop more than that; they therefore stick to it as long as they can get any corn, and when the land will no longer bear it, they clear another piece and serve that in the same manner, till they have run through their whole ground, and then they go back again to the piece they cleared first, which by that time is half forest, and half weeds and grass; this they clear again and sow it as before with corn as long as it will yield any. It is very evident that this must necessarily be the system while the settlers spend half their fortune in buying the land, that is, in paying the province fees for it: if a man has an hundred pounds in his pocket, and was able with it to cultivate properly forty or fifty acres; and he takes three or four hundred, which in patent fees costs him half his fortune, he then plainly lessens his ability to cultivate, while his cultivation ought to increase greatly. The writers on the subject of husbandry give very numerous instances of this in England, where farmers are too apt to hire much more land than they have money to stock well and manage properly; no wonder therefore that in America we should see the

the same error, where all sorts of people turn farmers—where no mechanic or artizan—sailor—soldier—servant, &c. but what if they get money take land, and turn farmers.

There are very few defects in rural œconomy, but many instances are here to be produced; and many of which flow from the same cause as their bad system, viz. taking too much land for their money; among which we are to rank their neglect of the native products of the country, which might be turned to profit, such as flax, vines, mulberries, &c. The extreme carelessness every where seen in the whole management of cattle, their slovenly fences, their utter inattention to raising manures, with other circumstances, not of equal importance.

In this condemnation however, there is a tract of country around Philadelphia which is to be exempted: land here is of such value that they think it worth cultivating with some care. There are several estates in that neighbourhood, which are let for twenty shillings an acre; and which even at that rent have been sold at twenty-five years purchase. But all this is the neighbourhood of that flourishing and wealthy city: it does not hold to any great distance

distance from that place. I must also exempt the lands of certain gentlemen who are fond of improvements, and who manage them in a manner superior to the generality of farmers, to whom it is a great reflection that they do not copy such better methods. These instances however are not so common as one could wish.

Duly considering the state of husbandry in this colony, I shall venture to propose some improvements which I think would greatly further the interests of the inhabitants.

Their system is the first thing that demands attention, because a thousand evils flow from this alone: instead of exhausting their lands with perpetual corn crops, as long as it will bear them, they certainly ought to throw in corn with such moderation as never to exhaust the soil; to intermix crops of pease, buck-wheat, turneps, cabbages, potatoes, clover, and lucerne among those of maize, wheat, barley, oats, and flax; this would keep the land clean and in heart; and when they had kept it in a system of corn as long as they wanted it, throw in the artificial grasses, that they might have at once a good meadow, instead of that miserable management which they
cal

call a fallow. The land, in their system, after it is done with corn, is of no more value than the sky to them, for some years at least; but in the system now proposed, they would get meadows that would feed large herds of cattle, or yield at least a ton, or a ton and half of hay per acre immediately. The great advantage of pursuing a system of this nature, even upon their own principles, would be, that it admits their spreading their culture for fresh land in the manner they do at present; it only obviates the mischief arising from exhausting it, and leaving it of no value.

In this proposition I mentioned lucerne, a grass which I am confident would answer with them to a great degree, and for several reasons. They know not how to raise dung, from the circumstance of their cattle running abroad all the winter; for where cattle are not confined, no dung can be made. The want of dung makes them solicitous for such land, and at the same time much confines their culture; with plenty of it, all their crops would be far more considerable: another point to be mentioned, is the heat of the climate, in a great measure, burning up the pastures, (except the watered ones) in all the maritime

time half of the province : now to remedy all these inconveniencies, I propose lucerne. In that climate, the common broad cast culture would do for it, and perhaps best. They should use it for soiling (as the British farmers call the operation) their horses, cows, and other cattle, under cover all summer through, keeping them well and regularly littered with straw ; and if they formed composts of the dung thus raised, with marle or loam, in the manner it is practiced in the West-Indies, it would be so much the better.

In this conduct they would, on a small quantity of land, be able to keep a large stock of cattle, which is alone a circumstance of great consequence in any country, and the quantity of dung they would be able to raise, if they used litter plentifully, would be of the highest importance in the management of their farms.

A union of this method with the improvement of their system, mentioned above, would not only vastly increase their products of corn, making one acre yield as much as two or three, but would also enable them at the same time to raise staples for exportation in a greater plenty than they do at present, flax seed being the

only one which they raise in their fields; both flax and hemp might then be valuable articles with them.

In the next place let me observe, that their inattention to vines is very inexcusable. In the back country they have hilly, and even rocky dry tracts of ground, that would in all probability answer perfectly well for them; their argument, that the wine made from these grapes at present is bad, is not a conclusive one: when planted in vineyards, and properly trained and dressed, with the intervals between the rows, cultivated as in Europe, the produce might, and probably would be of a different flavour from the uncultured grapes now found under the drip of forest trees. It is at least a point that should be tried; for though the reasoning of the Pennsylvanian farmers will never convince the world, fair experiment would; the importance of the object loudly speaks the expediency, not to say, necessity of the trial. Another objection made here, is the want of hands; but that is obviating every day by extreme increase of population: nor do we know, with any accuracy, that the vineyard culture in America would not answer the present price of labour; it is to be remembered

ed that they do not require attendance during the whole year, but only at an inconsiderable part of it.

Another improvement which might be made, is the introduction of filk: mulberries are in great plenty throughout the province, and filk has been wound off there, equal to the finest that comes from India or Italy. The people do not in the least pretend that the climate is improper, their only argument is, that the price of labour is too high. But this is as mistaken as any thing that could be urged, for servants are in no countries hired to make filk; it is a work executed at a certain season of the year, which lasts only for six weeks, by the females of a family, by the young, and aged, that cannot perform laborious work: this is the course of the business in the filk countries of Europe. Silk is a commodity that is never to be adopted, as the principal means of supporting a people, the time requisite for it is too short, as it leaves a sufficiency for other articles. Nothing can therefore be more absurd than to urge the high price of labour as a reason why filk cannot be made in this province. Labour is yet dearer in Georgia, but filk is there made in large quantities.

The native flax is another article which ought to be attended to by sensible planters in this province. It is amazing to think that more experiments have not been made on it: it is certainly an article that promises great advantages: but trials of a nature more accurate and scientific than what is to be expected from the planters and farmers of this country. Persons should, by government, be appointed to examine into this matter, and to try what a proper cultivation will do in improving this production.

These and other articles of improvement, for the province of Pennsylvania, deserve much more attention than they have hitherto met with. Why cannot the gentlemen of Philadelphia, and its neighbourhood, who are lovers of agriculture, form themselves into a society for the encouragement of that noble art? They might, in monthly meetings, be able to settle a plan of operations, which would, in a few years, by means of an annual subscription, given in bounties and premiums, alter the face of things. They might reduce these doubtful points to certainty; they might introduce a better system of rural œconomy, and

and be in a few years of infinite service to their country.

Before I conclude this chapter, I shall insert a table of the exports of the province.

Biscuit flour, 350,000 barrels, at 20s.	-	£.	350,000
Wheat, 100,000 qrs. at 20s.	-	-	100,000
Beans, pease, oats, Indian corn, and other grain,			12,000
Salt beef, pork, hams, bacon, and venison,			45,000
Bees wax 20,000 lb. at 1s.	-	-	1,000
Tongues, butter, and cheese,	-	-	10,000
Deer, and fundry other sorts of skins,	-	-	50,000
Live stock and horses,	-	-	20,000
Flax seed, 15,000 hhds. at 40s.	-	-	30,000
Timber plank, masts, boards, staves, and shingles		}	35,000
Ships built for sale, 25, at £700.	-	-	17,500
Copper ore, and iron in pigs and bars,	-	-	35,000
Total			<u>£. 705,500</u>

Upon this account I must observe, that far the greatest part is the cultivated produce of the lands; which is the very contrary to New England, whose lands yield nothing to export. In proportion to this circumstance, is the value of a colony, for it is the nature of colonization, that the people ought, on first principles, to support themselves by agriculture alone. Wheat appears to be the grand export of this province: that, and other articles of food, amount to above half a million, which

is a vast sum of money to export regularly, besides feeding every rank of people in the utmost plenty; but of late years this has risen to much more, for wheat, instead of being at 20s. a quarter, is at above 30s. No circumstance in the world can be more strong, in proof of the temperature, moderation, and healthiness of the climate, than this of exporting such quantities of wheat, which, throughout the globe, thrives no where in climates insalubrious to mankind: though nearly a universal grower, yet it is an article of export only in good and wholesome climates: consider our European experience, the exports of wheat are from England and Poland to the coast of Africa. All the intermediate countries, from extremity to extremity, are temperate and fine climates. Barbary, though hot, is one of the best in the world; provided (as in all cases of climate) you fix in the tracts that lie properly with respect to other circumstances, such as a freedom from low marshy coasts, which in all countries, especially hot ones, are the most unwholesome in the world: hilly and mountainous tracts are generally wholesome and temperate.

This

This export, of more than seven hundred thousand pounds worth of products, shews of what vast importance this colony is of to Britain ; but I must observe, that in a national light it is much to be regretted, that a larger portion of this sum is not in what are commonly called *staples* ; that is, products which cannot be raised in proper quantities in the mother country ; or which she is forced to buy of foreigners, such are copper, iron, naval stores, flax seed, &c. The Pensylvanian export of these is,

Skins,	-	-	-	-	£. 50,000
Flax seed,	-	-	-	-	30,000
Timber,	-	-	-	-	35,000
Ships,	-	-	-	-	17,500
Copper and iron,	-	-	-	-	35,000
Total					£. 167,500

As to wheat and provision, that part of them which goes to the West-Indies is in the light of a staple, but all that comes to Europe rivals the exports of Britain, and are to be considered differently. This is a fresh proof of the necessity of regulating the husbandry of Pensylvania, so as to enable the farmers to raise more of these

valuable products, which are of so great account to the mother country. This is a distinction which is very essential, and which good management may make as much for the advantage of Britain as of the colony *.

C H A P. XIII.

The inhabitants of Pensylvania—Method of living—New settlers—Mode of settling waste tracts—Plantations—Comparison between the husbandry of Britain and Pensylvania.

THIS country is peopled by as happy and free a set of men as any in America. Out of trade there is not much wealth to be found, but at the same time there is very little poverty, and hardly such a thing as a beggar in the province. This is not only a consequence of the plenty of land, and the rate of labour, but also of the principles of the Quakers, who have a con-

* For understanding the importance of staples well, consult *Political Essays concerning the Present State of the British Empire*.

considerable share in the government of the country. It is much to the honour of this sect that they support their own poor in all countries, in a manner much more respectable than known in any other religion.

There are some country gentlemen in Pennsylvania, who live on their estates in a genteel and expensive manner, but the number is but small; many are found, who make much such a figure as gentlemen in England of three or four hundred pounds a year, but without such a rental; for money is scarce in this country, and all the necessities and conveniencies of life cheap, except labour. But in general the province is inhabited by small freeholders, who live upon a par with great farmers in England; and many little ones who have the necessities of life and nothing more.

In the settled parts of the colony, there are few situations to be found that are without such a neighbourhood as would satisfy country gentlemen of small estates, or country parsons in Britain. There are, besides Philadelphia, many small towns in which are found societies that render the country agreeable; and the country itself is scattered with gentlemen at moderate distances, who have a social intercourse with each other,

other, besides occasional parties to Philadelphia.

The most considerable of the freeholders that do not however rank with gentlemen, are a set of very sensible, intelligent, and hospitable people, whose company, in one that is mixed, improves rather than lessens the agreeableness of it; a circumstance owing to many of them being foreigners, which even gives something of a polish to the manners when we find ourselves in the midst of a country principally inhabited by another people. The little freeholders (there are not many farmers, except near Philadelphia) are in ease and circumstances much superior to the little farmers in England.

The method of living in Pennsylvania in country gentlemen's families, is nearly like that of England: the only business is to ride about the plantation now and then, to see that the overseers are attentive to it; all the rest of the time is filled up with entertaining themselves; country sports, in the parts of the province not fully settled, are in great perfection; they have hunting, but their horses are unequal to those of England; shooting and fishing are much more followed, and are in greater perfection than
in

in England, though every man is allowed both to shoot and fish throughout the province, except the latter in cultivated grounds. They have partridges, pheasants, bustards, wild turkies, wild geese, ducks, and other water fowl, wood pigeons, &c. And the rivers are most of them very full of fish, especially in the back country, to which parties are made in boats with nets; in which excursions shooting is joined: the fish they take are brought home alive in well-boats, and put into their stores: every planter has his pond at least, but generally a chain of them, on a brook, which always supplies fresh water; in these stores, as they call them, are kept the products of their river-fishing, ready at all times for the table.

Their meals are three times a day, and served quite in the English taste: coffee, tea, and chocolate, are of the best sorts, cheap enough to be commanded in plenty by every planter, especially coffee and chocolate; sugar also is cheaper than in England; these, with good bread and good butter, give a breakfast superior to what gentlemen of small estates usually make in England. For dinner and supper they are much better supplied, as may easily be

supposed, when the plenty is considered that abounds in an American plantation: game, variety of fish, venison almost every where, poultry in prodigious plenty and variety, meat of all kinds, very good, and killed on every plantation of any size; several sorts of fruits, in a plenty surpassing any thing known in the best climates of Europe, such as melons, water-melons, and cucumbers, in the open field; apples, pears, cherries, peaches, nectarines, gooseberries, currants, strawberries, and raspberries, gathering some every month, from May till October. Their grapes, though plentiful to excess, are inferior. These are circumstances that make it neither difficult nor expensive to keep an excellent table. The wine commonly drank is Madeira, at not more than half the price of England; freight is cheaper, and there is none, or a very trifling duty. French and Spanish wines are also drank; rum is very cheap; and good beer is brewed by those who are attentive to the operation.

From hence it is sufficiently clear, that the time passed at the table need not be a barren entertainment. To this we must add reading, which fills up some hours very agreeably; great numbers of books,
in-

including all the new publications, are imported from London at Philadelphia; besides which, that city, which has a college and a literary society itself, employs several printers, and sends forth news-papers every day. If to this we add, that there are many families in which music is well understood—that Philadelphia abounds with schools of all sorts, and has a college—that the roads for communication are good—the post regular—and carriers numerous; it will upon the whole be thought that gentlemen of education and ideas may, without any violence on themselves, pass their time on a plantation in Pennsylvania, not only in plenty, but agreeably. It must be at once apparent, that a given income would go much further here than in Britain; this is so strongly a truth, that an income of four or five hundred pounds a year, and a plantation, can hardly be spent without extravagance, or indulging some peculiar expence; whereas that income from an estate in Britain will hardly give a man the appearance of a gentleman.

The new settlers upon the uncultivated parts of the province, are either such as go backward to the waste country, and
take

take up what land they please, paying the fixed fees to the proprietors; or such as buy uncultivated spots of other planters, who have more than they want, or chuse to sell: in this case, they make as good a bargain as they can; but the land is dearer than that which is had of the proprietors. It is remarkable to see the small tracts that men will buy with a view to support a whole family.

The progress of their work is this; they fix upon the spot where they intend to build the house, and before they begin it, get ready a field for an orchard, planting it immediately with apples chiefly, and some pears, cherries and peaches. This they secure by an inclosure, then they plant a piece for a garden; and as soon as these works are done, they begin their house: some are built by the countrymen without any assistance, but these are generally very bad hovels; the common way is to agree with a carpenter and mason for so many days work, and the countryman to serve them as a labourer, which, with a few irons and other articles he cannot make, is the whole expence: many a house is built for less than twenty pounds. As soon as
this

this work is over, which may be in a month or six weeks, he falls to work on a field of corn, doing all the hand labour of it, and, from not yet being able to buy horses, pays a neighbour for ploughing it; perhaps he may be worth only a calf or two and a couple of young colts, bought for cheapness; and he struggles with difficulties till these are grown; but when he has horses to work, and cows that give milk and calves, he is then made, and in the road to plenty. It is surprising with how small a sum of money they will venture upon this course of settling; and it proves at the first mention how population must increase in a country where there are such means of a poor man's supporting his family: and in which, the larger the family, the easier is his undertaking.

When a settler is possessed of a tolerable sum of money, as from one hundred to two hundred pounds, or such as begin with from two to six or seven hundred, they reap equal advantages from this plenty of land and the necessaries of life, for their money goes so much farther; and they are able to live much better, and in all respects more comfortably than upon equal sums in Europe;

rope ; that this is the case will be seen from the following account of a new settlement formed on the river Scoolkuyt, between 30 and 40 miles beyond Reading near the Kit-talanny mountains, in one of the most healthy and beautiful countries in the province. The tract of land was 5000 acres, which, being part of a large grant not settled, were purchased. The person who settled here went from the West of England, his whole fortune being twelve hundred pounds : it was some years after the event that this account was taken ; but though it may not be minutely accurate, yet is it sufficiently so to explain the expences of forming a settlement, and also the advantages of laying out such a sum of money.

Freight and expences of three persons from Bristol, - - - - -	}	£. 57
Expences of a residence at Philadelphia for about half a year, - - - - -	}	25
Purchase of 5000 acres - - - - -		267
N. B. A part of it unprofitable waste.		
Building a very neat house fit for a small family ; the expreſſion, ſuch as in England, would let for 20l. a year.	}	96
Furniture, - - - - -		90
Barn, ſtables, and other offices, - - - - -		22
Two negroes - - - - -		56
Wages for five years, of ſix German ſervants bought, - - - - -	}	120
Carried forward		733

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 193

Brought forward,	£. 733
Cloathing and expences one year, - - -	32
Implements of husbandry - - -	70
A boat - - - - -	10
Arms, ammunition and fundries - - -	9
A year's house-keeping and family expences	112
Live stock, 8 horses, at 4l. - - - £. 32	
10 Cows, at 3l. - - -	30
30 Young cattle, at 20s. - - -	30
70 Swine - - - - -	16
50 Sheep - - - - -	10
Poultry - - - - -	5
	123
Cash reserved for feeding the land, orchards, } gardens, and incidental expences - - -	111
	£. 1200

The annual expences of the family, &c.
were afterwards :

	l.	s.	d.
Labour, in cloathing negroes, wages paid } (besides the fix Germans) and la- bourers, - - - - -	27	10	0
House-keeping and family expences, -	60	0	0
Repairs of implements and new ones bought, -	16	10	0
Expences in building and additions to fur- niture, &c. - - - - - }	20	0	0
Province taxes, &c. - - - - -	11	11	0
Sundry expences. - - - - -	20	0	0
	£. 155	11	0
To which should be added interest of } 1200 l. at 5 per cent, - - - - - }	60	0	0
Total	215	11	0

194 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

The product was extremely various, but for several years it ran nearly as follows, none being reckoned but what was sold off the plantation, the increase of cattle was all the time considerable, besides the family living off the land; the 60l. for house-keeping being only for manufactures, India goods, rum, &c.

	l.	s.	d.
220 quarters. of wheat, -	220	0	0
40 quarters of Indian corn, -	14	0	0
100 qrs. of barley, pease, and beans, -	46	0	0
Product of cattle sold, - - -	34	0	0
Fruit and cyder, - - -	10	0	0
Sundry sorts of lumber, - - -	13	0	0
	337	0	0
Expences, - - -	215	0	0
Neat profit. - - -	£. 122	0	0

Which with the 5 per cent is 182 l. which on 1200l. is 15 per cent. This appears to me to be very considerable, for besides this amount of profit there is to be reckoned the increasing value of the estate, from buildings, fruit-trees, improvements, and the stock of cattle which on all American farms presently quadruple their numbers. What these

these articles amounted to cannot be said, but must certainly be considerable; this circumstance with that of living in so plentiful and agreeable a manner, are the greatest advantages of this country: one point is however to be attended to, which is the ability of employing the profit made in increasing the business, hiring more servants and breaking up more land, which would presently increase the profit considerably.

I am of opinion that 15 per cent is much exceeded by many farmers in England, upon a capital of 1200l., but they do not besides, live in the manner of the Penfylvanian planter, who has at least the advantages in house-keeping that are enjoyed in England by a country gentleman of four hundred pounds a year: this makes a vast difference; and the British farmer lies under the disadvantage like all his brethren of not being able to increase his business: but what an amazing advantage compared with this, is the cultivated spot being in the midst of 5000 acres all belonging to the planter, who enlarges his improvements gradually as suits him! this can no where be had in a country that is all parcelled out into estates, except a purchase is made of a

tract of waste land ; which is of a very different price in Britain and America.

Another account I gained of a new settled plantation, was one on a much smaller scale. It was of 300 acres of waste.

	l.	s.	d.
Patent fees on the grant, - - - -	30	0	0
Buildings, - - - -	45	0	0
Implements, - - - -	17	10	0
Two servants bought, - - - -	26	0	0
House-keeping, &c. - - - -	36	0	0
Furniture, - - - -	25	0	0
Orchard and feed, - - - -	13	10	0

	l.	s.	d.
2 horses, at 3l. 10s. - - -	7	0	0
4 cows, at 2l. 10s. - - -	10	0	0
10 swine, at 5s. - - - -	2	10	0
Poultry - - - -	0	10	0
	<u>20</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>
	£. 213	0	0

The annual expences were reckoned.

	l.	s.	d.
Taxes and repairs, - - - -	3	0	0
Implements, - - - -	5	10	0
Wages and cloathing, - - - -	16	0	0
Housekeeping, &c. - - - -	27	0	0
	<u>51</u>	<u>10</u>	<u>0</u>

The products annually sold in corn and lumber amounted to about 127l. This is very considerable, but the planter and a son both worked almost as hard as his servants.

In a few years he got almost the whole grant into culture; purchased more land, had near a dozen servants, and above 200 head of cattle. Such a rise is not to be experienced in cultivated countries.

In no territory in the world, I apprehend, can a man with two or three hundred pounds, enter into husbandry, with such a prospect of making a small fortune: in England, the sum is nothing; but where there is such a plenty of fresh land to be taken up, the case is different; a man's expences are few, he is enabled to save something every year, and every shilling he saves he can throw into an increase of culture, which is the greatest inducement to industry in the world.

My enquiries into the domestic œconomy of this province has brought me acquainted with another instance which I shall lay before the reader. Such accounts form but very unentertaining reading for people who look for amusement alone; but I cannot help esteeming them as the only means of gaining that sort of intelligence which is truly useful. The following instance was of a person who left Scotland a few years ago in order to settle in this province.

198 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

	l.	s.	d.
Freight from Glasgow to Philadelphia, -	25	0	0
Patent, fees, &c. of 1000 acres, -	37	10	0
Building a house, a barn, a stable, a cow-shed, a fruit house, a cyder apparatus, a poultry building, a hog-yard and a boat-house, - - - - -	136	0	0
Inclosing 86 acres with posts and planks in three divisions, - - - - -	16	0	0
Inclosing 111 acres with live hedge and bank in three divisions, - - - - -	21	0	0
Planting an orchard of 16 acres, containing 16,000 apple trees, 2000 pears 3000 cherries and 3000 peach-trees, -	22	10	0
Expence of the garden, - - - - -	11	10	0
Six negroes, - - - - -	185	0	0
Cloathing and food of ditto for a year, -	22	0	0
One servant, a foreigner, bought for three years, at 4l. 10s. - - - - -	13	10	0
Two ditto for 4 years, at 3l. 5s. -	26	5	0
Cloathing a year, - - - - -	14	10	0
Furniture, - - - - -	36	0	0
Arms, - - - - -	6	13	6
Ammunition, - - - - -	2	17	0
A schooner, - - - - -	15	0	0
A boat, - - - - -	6	5	0
Implements of planting, - - - - -	38	0	0
A year's house-keeping - - - - -	36	0	0
	659	5	0
Live stock.			
10 cows, at 3l. - - - - -	£. 30		
10 horses, - - - - -	50		
60 sheep, - - - - -	18		
Swine, - - - - -	14		
Poultry, &c. - - - - -	2		
	114	0	0
Sundries. - - - - -	30	0	0
	£ 803	5	0
	Product		

Product of the first year.

	l.	s.	d.
15 acres of wheat, at $2\frac{1}{2}$ qrs. per acre, } 37	10	0	
37 $\frac{1}{2}$ qrs. at 20s. - - - - -			
60 acres Indian corn, 40 bushels per acre, } 120	0	0	
2400, at 1s. - - - - -			
Cattle, - - - - -	15	0	0
Lumber - - - - -	10	10	0
	£.	183	0 0

Product of the second year.

	l.	s.	d.
20 acres of wheat, 2 qrs. per acre, 40 qrs. 40	0	0	
40 acres Indian corn, 30 bushels per acre, } 75	0	0	
1200 bushels, at 1s. 3d. - - - - -			
10 acres of barley, 3 qrs. per acre, 30 qrs. } 12	0	0	
at 8s. - - - - -			
15 acres of pease and beans, 3 qrs. per acre, } 22	10	0	
45 qrs. at 10s. - - - - -			
Fruit and cyder, - - - - -	10	0	0
Lumber, - - - - -	15	0	0
Cattle, - - - - -	20	0	0
	£.	194	10 0

Lest any persons should be misled by these accounts of produce, the first and second years, I must observe that many planters receive very little produce the first and second and some even the third years, which is owing to the ground being a thick wood: these and others, who soon make a considerable product, are such as get a tract of meadow, or rather up-land pasture in their grant, which for profit they plough up

up immediately and sow with corn. But at the same time I should observe, that in this province the expence of clearing, even the thickest woods, is not great, it is more than repaid in good management, by the lumber which arises on the land; but for this several hands are requisite, which cannot be procured by people who settle with only small sums of money. It is much to be regretted, that the preceding account is not more complete, particularly in the common annual expence and produce: however, it is evident from it, that the profit of the plantation was very soon considerable.

It is worthy of remark on these accounts, that the product seems to be made by the common husbandry of the province, which is so far from being perfect. May we not conclude, that the benefit would have been much greater, had a more correct agriculture been practised? There is the greatest reason to suppose, that a man well acquainted with the true principles of husbandry settling in this province, would be able to advance the profit of a plantation much beyond this account.

Having now laid before the reader, upon the best authority I have been able to gain,

gain, a state of the husbandry of this province, it remains for me to compare it with that of Great Britain ; which is one of the most important articles of this work, and indeed of as great consequence as any intelligence that can be laid before the reader, concerning American affairs ; for, unless this comparison is well understood, it is impossible to know the principles upon which America acts on the population of Britain. To find a man equally skilled in the husbandry of both countries is hardly to be expected ; but though I cannot give accounts of which I have such certainty of knowing to be accurate, in the case of Britain, as in that of Pennsylvania, yet as there are some late writers concerning the English agriculture, who are acknowledged to be of undoubted authority, I shall be able, by means of their works, to draw up such an account of the profit of husbandry in England, as shall have no material errors in it, in order to form the contrast to that of Pennsylvania. Upon these authorities, suppose a man, with a certain sum of money, to enter into husbandry in England, with a view to make the best interest he is able of his money—I shall suppose with
1200l.

202 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

1200l. as that sum has been calculated in the instance of this province. From the accounts we have of British husbandry, we are to suppose that the greatest profit is made by the culture of the best land.

Stock of a farm of 250 acres of rich land.

	l.	s.	d.
Rent, tythe, and parish taxes, of 250 acres	337	10	0
at 27s. - - - - -			
Housekeeping, &c. for one year, -	80	0	0
Eight horses for the culture of 150 acres	120	0	0
arable land, at 15l. - - - - -			

Live stock for 100 acres of grass.

15 cows at 7l.	-	-	-	-	105	0	0
10 oxen at 5l.	-	-	-	-	50	0	0
20 young cattle at 30s.	-	-	-	-	30	0	0
10 swine at 10s.	-	-	-	-	5	0	0
300 sheep at 10s.	-	-	-	-	150	0	0
Poultry,	-	-	-	-	3	0	0
Two men, one maid, and a boy, wages,					27	0	0
Pay of four labourers a year, at 20l.	-				80	0	0
Implements of husbandry and harness,	-				130	0	0
Seed for the first crop,	-	-	-		40	0	0
Contingent expences, and cash in hand, for					42	10	0
advantage of markets, purchase of ma-							
nure, &c.	-	-	-	-			
Total £.					1200	0	0

The annual expences.

	l.	s.	d.
Rent, &c. - - - - -	337	10	0
Housekeeping, - - - - -	60	0	0
Labour, - - - - -	107	0	0
Carried forward	504	10	0

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 203

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward	504	10	0
Repair of implements,	-	-	-
Ten oxen,	50	0	0
Sundry expences,	30	0	0
	634	10	0
Interest of 1200l. at five per cent.	60	0	0
Total	£. 694	10	0

Annual produce.

The system in which the arable fields are thrown is supposed to be,

1. Turneps,
2. Barley or oats,
3. Clover,
4. Wheat,

which we are told is the best husbandry of Britain; upon this system the 37 acres of corn, sown in spring, is to be divided into 30 to sell of barley, and 7 for the teams of oats; 30 at 4 quarters an acre, 120 quarters at 24s.

37 acres of wheat, $3\frac{1}{2}$ quarters an acre, 129 quarters at 50s.

Profit of 15 cows at 5l.	-	-	-	75	0	0
Product of 10 oxen,	-	-	-	100	0	0
Profit on young cattle,	-	-	-	30	0	0
Do. on swine,	-	-	-	35	0	0
Do. on sheep,	-	-	-	130	0	0
Hay sold,	-	-	-	20	0	0
Profit by poultry,	-	-	-	10	0	0
Sale of wood,	-	-	-	10	0	0

Expences as above,

Total £. 876 10 0

694 10 0

Profit £. 182 0 0

This

This profit, with the interest before deducted, is 141 l. which from 1200 l. is 20 per cent. This calculation is upon the supposition of 100 acres out 250 being grass land; supposing the whole arable, which some writers esteem the most profitable, the account may then be stated as follows: though I should premise, that not many tracts in England are to be found without grass, and landlords are tenacious of having it ploughed up.

	l.	s.	d.
Rent, tythe, and parish taxes, of 250 acres at 27 s.	337	10	0
Housekeeping, &c. one year,			
Twelve horses at 15 l.	180	0	0
Live stock for 60 acres of clover, and 10 of grass, and 60 of turneps (exclusive of maintaining the 12 horses)			
5 cows at 7 l.	35	0	0
5 young cattle at 30 s.	7	10	0
200 sheep at 10 s.	100	0	0
Swine,	10	0	0
10 oxen for turneps,	50	0	0
Poultry,	3	0	0
Four men, one maid, and two boys wages,	50	0	0
Pay of five labourers at 20 l.	100	0	0
Implements of culture of all sorts,	250	0	0
Seed,	55	0	0
Total £.	1258	0	0

The annual expence.

	l.	s.	d.
Rent, &c.	337	10	0
Housekeeping,	100	0	0
Carried forward	407	10	0

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 205

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward	407	10	0
Wages and labour,	150	0	0
Repairs of implements,	80	0	0
Ten oxen,	50	0	0
Contingent expences,	40	0	0
Interest of 12581.	62	18	0
	<u>£. 820</u>	<u>8</u>	<u>0</u>

The annual produce.

	l.	s.	d.
The system of this farm, like that of the former, is supposed to be,			
60 acres turneps,			
60 ——— barley,			
60 ——— clover,			
60 ——— wheat,			
10 ——— grafs,			
60 acres wheat, $3\frac{1}{2}$ qrs. per acre, 210 qrs.			
at 50s.			
48 acres of barley, 4 qrs. an acre, 192 qrs.			
at 24s. *			
Profit on 5 cows,			
Do. on young cattle,			
Do. on sheep,			
Do. on fwine,			
Do. on poultry,			
Sale of wood,			
Sale of 10 oxen,			
Total,	£. 1033	8	0
Expence,	820	8	0
	<u>Profit £. 213</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>

* The feed for the land in the next year, saved, besides these crops in both instances.

Which,

Which, with 62l. 18s. interest, is 275l. 18s. and that on 1258l. is about $21\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.

It appears from these accounts, that in England, on the best land, and with excellent husbandry, about 20 per cent. is made by employing 1200l. on 250 acres. The circumstance of the husbandry being excellent, is not to be forgotten; for not all parts of this kingdom practise so good a system as,

1. Turneps,
2. Barley,
3. Clover,
4. Wheat,

which the writers on husbandry justly enough reckon to be excellent: nor will perhaps half the kingdom admit of such a system, from being too heavy and wet to yield turneps; in which case, the profit is not to be supposed nearly to equal the turnep culture, which excludes the barren expence of a fallow: but the number of farmers, even in this enlightened age and country, that practise the above culture is very small; on the contrary they, like the planters of America, are too apt to take several crops of corn running, instead of introducing turneps and clover.

It

It appeared above, that the profit on 1200 l. employed on a plantation of 5000 acres in Pensylvania, in a few years after settling it, was 15 per cent. whereas in England, that sum yields 20 or 21 per cent. But then there are other circumstances to be considered, which I am afraid will more than ballance this difference. The produce from the American farm was gained by the common management of the province, which is as bad and unprofitable a system as can well be imagined; consequently it would admit of great improvements, without introducing any other crops: but the 20 per cent. in England is gained from the most capital management which common crops will admit, and on the most favourable soil that is to be found plentifully in Britain. In one case you are open to an immense improvement, in the other none can be imagined without deviating from common husbandry. *Secondly*, The American has the fee simple of 5000 acres into his bargain, with all the timber on it; this, however plentiful land may be, is a very different affair from *renting* 250. Of the same superiority, is the house and offices, orchards and gardens, made and to be enjoyed for ever, with nothing in the
op-

opposite scale to balance them. The American lives upon his own freehold; if the Englishman would do the same, he must buy it, in which case his 250 l. a year would, at 28 years purchase, cost 7000 l. in which case his capital must be 8200 l. and upon 7000 l. of it he would make perhaps $2\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. *Thirdly*, and which is the most important of all, the Pennsylvanian can by an annual increase of culture, expend all his savings at the same advantage of 15 per cent. or rather at 20 or 25; for when the buildings are raised, the estate bought and stocked, additions to culture will certainly pay better interest than the original sum, out of which were such expences, together with freight, &c. all which may, in respect of the profit, be called barren. On the contrary, the English farmer can do nothing better than put out his profits at the common interest of five per cent. or perhaps only four; for he can very rarely increase his land as he grows rich, without leaving one farm, and moving into a larger, which is quite another affair from the gradual increase of the American. *Fourthly*, Both the farmers are supposed to live partly off their farms, a sum of money being allowed in either case

case for buying such articles as their lands do not produce. But what an amazing difference is there between them in this respect. With the sum charged to the English farmer, he will not be able to live much better than a day-labourer—and not to live at all if he is not saving to a degree. But on the other hand, the Pensylvanian lives, in point of table and sports, to the full equal with a country gentleman in England of four or five hundred pounds a year; and, in several instances, far superior to one of 1000l. a year.

In all these articles, the freeholder in Pensylvania is so much superior, that the comparison will scarcely bear mentioning; nor is it less in all those circumstances of convenience and agreeableness, which result from living upon your own land—your own manor: the farmer gets a long lease with difficulty, and at the end of it must pay perhaps more than the land is worth, or quit his farm: and during the whole lease plagued possibly either by his landlord or steward; he must not kill a hare or a partridge without being liable to a prosecution—he must not —— but the comparison in all these respects will not bear an idea of equality.

But here it should be observed, that to gentlemen or any persons of enlarged ideas, agriculture in Britain is probably far more profitable than in the preceding sketch; for if plants not commonly cultivated are introduced on the farm, the advantage will be far more than 20 per cent. of this, carrots, potatoes, cabbages, hops, madder, &c. are instances. To give some idea of this, it will be proper to lay before the reader a calculation of this point, upon the data given by writers of husbandry that can be depended upon. I shall begin with carrots.

<i>Expences per acre.</i>	l.	s.	d.
Ploughing and other tillage,	0	15	3
Manuring, - - -	1	0	3
Seed and sowing, - - -	0	5	9
Hand hoeing, - - -	1	9	0
Digging up, - - -	1	10	0
Carting, clearing, &c. - - -	1	7	0
Rent, tythe, &c. - - -	0	17	0
	£.	7	4 3

<i>Produce.</i>			
560 bushels at 1s. 1d. -	30	6	8
Expences, - - -	7	4	3
Profit £.	23	2	5
	This		

This a single crop ; but the average of several expence per acre, 6l. 4 s. 5 d.

				l.	s.	d.
Product,	-	-	-	27	14	1
Profit,	-	-	-	21	3	5*

This is 350 per cent. but then we are sensible that deductions must be made for general expences on the farm, which have no place here, as some labour, fences, house-keeping, &c. &c.

In madder a gentleman has expended 206l. 14s. on 10 acres, the produce was 540l. and the profit 333l. 6s. † This is 161 per cent. With cabbages another person has made the following advantage upon an average.

<i>Expences.</i>						
Rent,	-	-	-	1	10	0
Ploughing,	-	-	-	1	11	6
Planting,	-	-		0	4	6
Horse hoeing and weeding,				0	9	6
				£. 3 15 6		

* *Course of Experimental Agriculture*, Vol. II. p. 190.

† *Farmer's Tour through England*, Vol. II. p. 299.

Produce.

		l.	s.	d.
By feeding cattle,	-	16	16	4
Expences,	- -	3	15	6
	Profit £.	*13	0	10

This is 347 per cent. In all these cases, we know upon a whole farm, such crops are not in general to be gained : and that expences so reckoned would run much higher ; but it is evident that the introduction of such crops would be far more profitable than common ones. Hops are found, in trials, to yield above 100 per cent. but potatoes exceed them all, yielding sometimes crops from 50l. to 100l. an acre, from an expenditure of from 20l. to 30l.

If a farm was to be cultivated in England upon the principle of cultivating crops only, which would yield such large products, in that case, the profit of husbandry would turn out over a whole farm much more than 20 per cent. probably 40 or 50 per cent. Whether Pennsylvania by adopting the same improvements would equal it, is not to be

* *Six Months Tour*, Vol. II. p. 121.

decided here, the trial never having been made; but certainly a man that could make 40 per cent. by husbandry in England, would act very imprudently to change his situation without much stronger proofs of superior advantages elsewhere, than he can have at present.

Settling upon a plantation in this colony seems to be of superior benefit to people who can pay their freight to America, and then have money enough left to buy a small plantation, build a house, &c.—Also to those who with a sum of money from 500 l. to 2000 l. would *in common husbandry* apply it to the greatest advantage.—Also to country gentlemen of small fortunes, to whom the extreme dearness of Britain is very burthenfome—but to men who will adopt the profitable modern improvements of husbandry, Britain is more beneficial than America.—And to such whose fortunes bear a proportion to the luxury of the age, England certainly is the first country in the universe. These distinctions are never to be forgotten; general assertions for or against any country are always erroneous: nothing can be plainer than the fact, that those whose incomes are too small to maintain them in England, may live in a far supe-

rior stile in Pensylvania, but with other classes the contrary is the case : every one must know that in order to reap advantage from this circumstance they must quit all connections in their native country ; they must give up both friends and relations, and all those endearing circumstances which renders a native country so agreeable.— They must cross an immense ocean, and fix in a new hemisphere, where the people and the climate are equally new : they must submit to a much hotter sun than that of England, and also to greater cold ; and they must run the hazard of being destroyed or wounded by poisonous serpents that abound far more than in Britain : in return for these circumstances, they will enjoy the advantages specified above ; great most certainly, but of value only to those whose fortunes are so small that they cannot live like their forefathers, whose money in cheaper times went so much farther. When a man lives the ridicule and contempt of his neighbours, because his mean circumstances force him to strict frugality, he had better fly to vipers and rattle-snakes than into the company of his neighbours : and when even his penury will scarce keep him from starving, it is of little consequence to know that the
in-

inhospitable clime he lives in is his native one: there are a thousand comforts in a competency which may make amends for the loss of such friends as poverty brings. And as to crossing an ocean, and living in another hemisphere, they are what are done by others even in wealthy situations at home; there is nothing terrible in it to people of sense.

C H A P. XIV.

VIRGINIA and MARYLAND.

*Climate of Virginia and Maryland—Soil—
Productions—Face of the Country.*

THESE two provinces lie between latitude $31\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ and 40° , being in extent about 250 miles from north to south, and the same breadth from east to west, that is from the sea to the Alligany mountains. The parallel is the same as Morocco, Fez, the coast of Barbary, Syria, Lesser Asia, Greece, Sicily, Naples, and the southern provinces of Spain, that is perhaps, without exception, the countries of all the world that enjoy the finest climate.

That of Virginia and Maryland has its objections, but is notwithstanding fine: in summer the heats would be insupportable on the coast, were it not for the sea breezes which refresh them greatly. In the back country, among the mountains, this heat is much less violent than in the low country; for there they enjoy one of the most temperate climates in the world:
the

the weather is changeable, and the changes are sudden: in winter, frosts come on with very little warning, and after a warm day; and in summer the tempests of thunder and lightning are extremely violent and sudden, but do no more harm than in much more temperate climates. Their rains at certain seasons of the year are very heavy, but not of long duration, and the frosts of winter are sooner: in general, throughout the year the sky is clear, and the air is pure and wholesome.

The soil of the country varies much; all the sea coast, for above one hundred miles, is a low, flat, sandy beach, so low, that the country is not descried from on ship-board till you are in the rivers, out of which the trees seem to rise: the low lands on the banks of them are a rich, black mould, more than a foot deep, of a fertility exceeding every thing in Pennsylvania or to the northward: the higher lands are sandy, but not therefore barren or of little value; there is a moisture in it that is sufficient even for tobacco, which will do on the most luxuriant soils in the world. When you get from one hundred to one hundred and fifty miles from the coast, the country rises, and increases in inequality for another hundred

hundred miles, till you come to the Alleghany mountains. This line of country is far superior to the coast in climate, healthiness, and agreeableness, and in general the soil much exceeds it *.

The products of Virginia and Maryland differ considerably from those of Pennsylvania, from their nearer neighbourhood to the sun. As to timber and wood, they have all the sorts that are found upon the continent : many sorts of oaks, cedars, firs, cyprus, elm, ash, and walnut ; some

* “ The whole sea coast of North America, says Dr. Mitchell, from the bay of New York to the gulph of Mexico is a low, flat, sandy beach ; the soil for a great distance from it is sandy and barren, the climate is very rainy, and as these rains have no drains from the land, but stagnate all over a low flat country, they form innumerable swamps and marshes, which render it very unhealthful. It is a common opinion, that all this part of the continent, which stretches into the ocean at a considerable distance from the rest, has been recovered from the sea, and that it is nothing but a drained marsh or sand bank, which indeed it very much resembles, and in nothing more than its pernicious influence on mankind. Accordingly in all this space nothing is to be found either on the surface or in the bowels of the earth, but beds of sea shells, in place of stones, metals, and other minerals, and the earth is as barren in these as in other productions.” *Present State*, p. 184. This is in general true of the coast, but the same writer acknowledges all the merit of the back country.

of

of their oaks are said to measure two feet square and sixty feet in height. They have also beech, poplar, hazel, besides sassafras, sarsaparilla, and other dying woods. The unsettled country is all a forest of these trees, without underwood, and not standing so close but they may any where be rode through. Near the coast the low lands are all swamps, from which grow cedars, pines, and cypresses. This plenty of wood is of great advantage here, as in all the colonies more to the north, in affording lumber for the West Indies, which forms a considerable article in the exports of the province.

As to fruit trees, they have all those which are known to us in Europe or Pennsylvania; particularly apples, pears, cherries, quinces, plums, grapes, peaches, and nectarines, in the same plenty as in Pennsylvania, so as to be applied to the same use of feeding hogs as there. All other fruits are produced here, as may from the climate be supposed.

Besides tobacco, which is the staple of these colonies, and of which I shall speak more by-and-by, wheat and all our other kinds of grain and pulse thrive here equally, if not in a superior degree, to any of
our

our other colonies ; a circumstance in which the country resembles those in the same parallel in Europe and Africa, Sicily, Spain, and Barbary, which produce the best wheat that is known in the world ; and in these articles of common husbandry the planters have increased much more than in tobacco, for reasons which I shall explain hereafter.

No part of America, or indeed of the world, boasts more plentiful or more general production of all sorts of garden vegetables ; and in a state of excellence that is proportioned to the heat of the climate. The same remark may also be made of their fish and fowl, having every sort that is found in Pennsylvania, with others that are peculiar to the country ; being in all respects of food as plentiful as any territory in the world.

The face of the country varies in different parts of the provinces : for about one hundred or one hundred and fifty miles from the sea it is generally low and flat, much spread with marshes and swamps : these in Carolina are applied to the culture of rice, but Virginia and Maryland are not hot enough for that production, which by the way is a proof how much better their climate

mate is. This part of the country is intersected with immense rivers and bays of the sea, so as to afford a greater inland navigation than is known in any other country in the world. As the land recedes from the coast it gradually rises, until at the distance above-mentioned it begins to grow hilly, which in as many miles more ends in the Alligany mountains. In all this part of the provinces, the face of the country is as beautiful as can well be imagined: there are not many level tracts, and those are rich meadows, not swamps or marshes. In the vales streams of clear water are every where to be found, and even navigable rivers enter among the mountains: the hills hang to the eye in a great variety of forms, and spread with forests that give an amazing magnificence to the scenery. Spots are here frequently found, that possess every picturesque beauty which in England our nobility are so emulous to create in their parks; and all this back country possesses a climate free from the extreme heats which oppress the inhabitants of the coast. At the same time that it enjoys so many advantages of health and agreeableness, it is likewise fertile in an high degree, and in most parts of it capable
of

of producing fine crops of tobacco, to which it is in most parts applied, where navigation is at a convenient distance. From all these circumstances it is evident, that no part of our American colonies is more desirable in most respects.

C H A P. XV.

Description of tobacco—The culture—Remarks—Full account of a plantation.

THIS plant is cultivated in all parts of North America, from Quebec to Carolina, and even the West Indies; but, except in Maryland, Virginia, and North Carolina, they plant no more than for private use, making it an object of exportation only in these provinces, where it is of such immense consequence.

It was planted in large quantities by the Indians, when we first came to America, and its use from them brought into Europe; but what their method of culture was is now no longer known, as they plant none, but buy what they want of the English.

To-

Tobacco is raised from the seed, which is sown in spring upon a bed of rich mould; when about the height of four or five inches, the planter takes the opportunity of rainy weather to transplant them. The ground which is prepared to receive it, is, if it can be got, a rich black mould; fresh woodlands are best: sometimes it is so badly cleared from the stumps of trees, that they cannot give it any ploughings; but in old cultivated lands they plough it several times, and spread on it what manure they can raise. The negroes then hill it; that is, with hoes and shovels they form hillocks, which lie in the manner of Indian corn, only they are larger, and more carefully raked up: the hills are made in squares, from six to nine feet distance, according to the land; the richer it is the further they are put asunder, as the plants grow higher, and spread proportionably. The plants in about a month are a foot high, when they prune and top them; operations, in which they seem to be very wild, and to execute them upon no rational principles; experiments are much wanting on these points, for the planters never go out of the beaten road, but do just as their

their fathers did, resembling therein the British farmers their brethren. They prune off all the bottom leaves, leaving only seven or eight on a stalk, thinking that such as they leave will be the larger, which is contrary to nature in every instance thro'out all vegetation. In six weeks more the tobacco is at its full growth, being then from four and a half to seven feet high: during all this time, the negroes are employed twice a week in pruning off the suckers, clearing the hillocks from weeds, and attending to the worms, which are a great enemy to the plant; when the tobacco changes its colour, turning brown, it is ripe, and they then cut it down, and lay it close in heaps in the field to sweat one night: the next day they are carried in bunches by the negroes to a building called the *tobacco house*, where every plant is hung up separate to dry, which takes a month or five weeks; this house excludes the rain, but is designed for the admission of as much air as possible. They are then laid close in heaps in the tobacco houses for a week or a fortnight to sweat again, after which it is sorted and packed up in hogheads; all the operations, after the

plants are dried, must be done in moist or wet weather, which prevents its crumbling to dust.

There are among many inferior distinctions of sorts two generally attended to, *Oroonoko*, and *sweet scented*; the latter is of the finest flavour, and most valued, growing chiefly in the lower parts of Virginia, viz. on James river, and York river, and likewise on the Rappanhannock, and the south side of the Potomack: the *Oroonoko* is principally in use on Chesepeak bay, and the back settlements on all the rivers. It is strong and hot; the principal markets for it are Germany and the North.

One of the greatest advantages attending the culture of tobacco, is the quick, easy, and certain method of sale. This was effected by the inspection law, which took place in Virginia in the year 1730, but not in Maryland till 1748. The planter, by virtue of this, may go to any place and sell his tobacco, without carrying a sample of it along with him, and the merchant may buy it, though lying a hundred miles, or at any distance from his store, and yet be morally sure both with respect to quantity and quality. For this

purpose, upon all the rivers and bays of both provinces, at the distance of about twelve or fourteen miles from each other, are erected warehouses, to which all the tobacco in the country must be brought, and there lodged, before the planters can offer it to sale ; and inspectors are appointed to examine all the tobacco brought in, receive such as is good and merchantable, condemn and burn what appears damnified or insufficient. The greatest part of the tobacco is prized, or put up into hogsheads by the planters themselves, before it is carried to the warehouses. Each hogshead, by an act of assembly, must be 950lb. neat, or upwards ; some of them weigh 14 cwt. and even 18 cwt. and the heavier they are the merchants like them the better ; because four hogsheads, whatsoever their weight be, are esteemed a tun, and pay the same freight. The inspectors give notes of receipt for the tobacco, and the merchants take them in payment for their goods, passing current indeed over the whole colonies ; a most admirable invention, which operates so greatly, that in Virginia they have no paper currency*.

* *Mair's Book keeping*, p. 333.

The merchants generally purchase the tobacco in the country, by sending persons to open *stores* for them; that is, warehouses in which they lay in a great assortment of British commodities and manufactures, to these, as to shops, the planters resort, and supply themselves with what they want, paying, in inspection receipts, or taking on credit according to what will be given them; and as they are in general a very luxurious set of people, they buy too much upon credit; the consequence of which is, their getting in debt to the London merchants, who take mortgages on their plantations, ruinous enough, with the usury of eight per cent. But this is apparently the effect of their imprudence in living upon trust.

Respecting the product of tobacco, they know very little of it themselves by the acre; as they never calculate in that manner, and not many tobacco grounds were ever measured: all their ideas run in the proportion per working hand. Some are hired labourers, but in general they are negroe slaves; and the product, from the best information I have gained, varies from an hoghead and a half to three and an

half per head. The hoghead used to be of the value of 5l. but of late years it is 8l. The variation is therefore from 12l. to 28l. per head, according to the goodness of the lands and other circumstances. But the planters, none of them depend on tobacco alone, and this is more and more the case since corn has yielded a high price, and since their grounds have begun to be worn out. They all raise corn and provisions enough to support the family and plantation, besides exporting considerable quantities; no wheat in the world exceeds in quality that of Virginia and Maryland. Lumber they also send largely to the West Indies. The whole culture of tobacco is over in the summer months; in the winter the negroes are employed in sawing and cutting timber, threshing corn, clearing new land, and preparing for tobacco: so that it is plain, they make a product per head, besides that of tobacco.

Suppose each negroe makes two hogheads of tobacco, or 16l. and 4l. in corn, provisions, and lumber, besides supporting the plantation, this is a moderate supposition; and if true, the planter's profit may be easily calculated: the negroe costs him

50l.

50l. his cloathing, tools, and fundries, 3l. in this case, the expence of the slave is only the interest of his cost, 2l. 10s. and the total only makes 5l. 10s. a year. To this we must add the interest of the planter's capital, province taxes, &c. which will make some addition, perhaps thirty or forty shillings per head more, there will then remain 12l. 10s. a head profit to the planter; which is more than cent. per cent. profit: but this being a point of considerable importance, shall be further examined.

There is no plant in the world that requires richer land, or more manure than tobacco; it will grow on poorer soils, but not to yield crops that are sufficiently profitable to pay the expences of negroes, &c. The land they found to answer best is fresh woodlands, where many ages have formed a stratum of rich black mould. Such land will, after clearing, bear tobacco many years, without any change, prove more profitable to the planter than the power of dung can do on worse lands: this makes the tobacco planters more solicitous for new land than any other people in America, they wanting it much more. Many of them have very handsome houses, gardens,

dens, and improvements about them, which fixes them to one spot; but others, when they have exhausted their grounds, will sell them to new settlers for corn-fields, and move backwards with their negroes, cattle, and tools, to take up fresh land for tobacco; this is common, and will continue so as long as good land is to be had upon navigable rivers: this is the system of business which made some, so long ago as 1750, move over the Allegany mountains, and settle not far from the Ohio, where their tobacco was to be carried by land some distance, which is a heavy burthen on so bulky a commodity, but answered by the superior crops they gained: the French encroachments drove these people all back again; but upon the peace, many more went, and the number increasing, became the occasion of the new colony which has been settled in that country.

A very considerable tract of land is necessary for a tobacco plantation; first, that the planter may have a sure prospect of increasing his culture on fresh land; secondly, that the lumber may be a winter employment for his slaves, and afford casks for his

his crops. Thirdly, that he may be able to keep vast stocks of cattle for raising provisions in plenty, by ranging in the woods; and where the lands are not fresh, the necessity is yet greater, as they must yield much manure for replenishing the worn-out fields. This want of land is such, that they reckon a planter should have 50 acres of land for every working hand; with less than this they will find themselves distressed for want of room.

But I must observe, that great improvements might be made in the culture of this crop: the attention of the planters is to keep their negroes employed on the plants and the small space that the hillocks occupy, being very apt to neglect the intervals; the expence of hoeing them is considerable, and consequently they are apt to be remiss in this work. Here they ought to substitute the horse-hoeing management, which would cost much less, and be an hundred times more effectual. The roots of the tobacco are powerful; they spread far beyond the hillocks, which ought to convince the planters that they should feed them there by good culture, but this is little considered. A few men once got

into the use of a plough, they invented in the back parts of Virginia, for opening a trench in the intervals, to kill weeds, loosen the earth, and carry the water of hasty rains off; but, from the carelessness of servants, the scheme came to nothing, though it promised better ideas in future.

I would propose to them the use of such a machine as in Kent is applied to cultivating the intervals of the hop-grounds, which consists of several flat triangular shares, which work near each other, being let into a beam from which it is drawn; they call it, if I mistake not, a nidget; this would keep the tobacco intervals in a fine pulverized state, and prepare them to be thrown against the hillock, for the nourishment of the roots, by a machine made upon the principles of that I have just mentioned, but upon an improved construction. In one of the *Tours through England*, there is a draft of one, which, with a little alteration for breadth, would do admirably for this purpose. Would the planters enter into these ideas, they would soon find their expences lessen, at the same time that their products increased. This culture, upon the Tullian system, would so improve the
in-

intervals, as to prepare them for the plants in the following year, and they would not so soon come to the complaint of their lands being exhausted.

Let us calculate what the culture of tobacco would cost per acre, if labour was the same price as in England; this is not difficult to do.

	l.	s.	d.
Seed, sowing, and preparation of a seed bed, the share of an acre, }	0	1	6
Three ploughings of the plantation, -	0	3	6
Harrowing, - - - - -	0	0	6
Measuring out the spaces for the hillocks, and marking them by setting up sticks, }	0	1	2
Hilling with hoes and shovels, - - -	0	2	6
Planting, - - - - -	0	1	2
Topping and pruning the plants at $\frac{1}{4}$ a plant, at six feet asunder, there are 1210 upon an acre, }	1	5	0
Pruning ten times more, at 3s. 6d. an acre,	1	15	0
Worming ten times, at 2s. - - -	1	0	0
Hoeing the hillocks four times during the season, at 1s. 6d. - - - }	0	6	0
Hoeing the intervals, suppose once, -	0	5	0
Cutting down, and laying into heaps, -	0	2	0
Carrying to tobacco-house, and hanging up,	0	8	10
Taking down, and laying in heaps, -	0	3	6
Sorting, - - - - -	0	2	6
Packing in hogheads, - - - - -	0	3	6
	<u>£.</u>	<u>6</u>	<u>1 8</u>

Suppose a man earns, on an average 1s. 4d. a day, the year round, it amounts in a year to 20l. 16s. At 6l. 1s. 8d. an acre, therefore he would be able to cultivate something

thing better than $3\frac{1}{2}$. The same proportion probably holds for the negroes, for as their annual expence is only 7 or 8l. a year, the separate charges per acre would be proportioned, and the quantity of land to be managed by one hand the same: this calculation is upon supposition that the ground is fresh, and requires no manure; if that is to be carried on, the account would be different; and perhaps three acres would prove the quantity. The product we found, was from one hoghead and half to three, and an half per working hand, or from 12 to 28l. The average is about two hhds. or 16l. which divided by three, the number of acres, gives the produce per acre of 5l. 6s. 8d. when tobacco is at 8l. a hhd. according to the rate of labour in the dear parts of England, it costs more than this in mere labour to cultivate, which shews, if any thing can shew it, how much cheaper the labour of negroes is, being certainly as about three to one.

Having ascertained these points as nearly as I am able, I shall in the next place calculate the settling a tobacco plantation. I am sorry I cannot give a real account, but though I applied to many for it, it is what I could not procure; from the similar accounts

counts before given in other colonies, I shall be able to come near the truth. I shall suppose the planter to go from England as in former cases.

Freight and expences of two persons from		
London	- - - }	£. 50
Ditto of two others	- - -	25
20 negroes at 50l.	- - -	1000
Two ditto women	- - -	100
An overseer	- - -	40
Patent fees and expences on taking up 2000 acres,		40
House,	- - -	100
Offices and tobacco-house,	- - -	100
Furniture,	- - -	100
Implements of culture,	- - -	50
A sloop and canoe,	- - -	50
Arms, ammunition, and fundries,	- - -	10
Expences of negroes,	- - -	60
Extra expences * on ditto.	- - -	10
House-keeping and family expences,	- - -	100
House servants wages,	- - -	20
Live stock, 10 horses, at 4l.	- -	£. 40
40 cows, at 3l.	- -	120
50 young cattle,	- -	50
100 swine	- -	25
100 sheep,	- -	25
Poultry,	- -	5
		265
Expences on orchard and garden,	- -	20
Incidental expences,	- -	80
		£. 2210

* Their first year's work is clearing some ground and the garden and orchard: after that the getting lumber and the negroes spare time from the crop, will clear land as fast as it is wanted.

The

The annual expence.

	l.	s.	d.
Province taxes, - - -	20	0	0
Expence of negroes, - - -	60	0	0
Repairs of implements, - - -	15	0	0
House-keeping, &c. - - -	60	0	0
Building and furniture - - -	20	0	0
Overfeer, - - -	30	0	0
House servants wages, - - -	20	0	0
Incidents, - - -	20	0	0
	245	0	0
Interest of 2200l. - - -	110	0	0
	£. 355	0	0

Annual produce.

44 hogsheads of tobacco, at 8l. -	352	0	0
4l. a head in corn, provisions, and lumber, -	88	0	0
Product of cattle, - - -	80	0	0
Fruit and cyder, - - -	10	0	0
	530	0	0
Expences, - - -	355	0	0
	175	0	0
Add the interest before charged, -	110	0	0
	£. 285	0	0

which from 1885l. is 13 per cent. but house-keeping 60l. might be added, as it is expended in products extra from the plantation. The receipt would then be 345 l. and the interest 15 per cent. The 175l. is the sum the planter might annually

usually lay out in negroes and other labour: here lies his great advantages, if he chooses to make use of them; for having land plenty, and able at any time to get more, the money he lays out in labour and the small additions of tools, &c. is expended at compound interest, at the rate he makes per cent. by his negroes. Suppose the negro (which is much more than truth with good management) and attendant charges costs him 8 l. a year, the produce is 20 l. and all other contingent charges would not reduce it so far but the profit would be immense, and soon accumulate into considerable fortune.

On the other hand it is said, fortunes are rarely made by tobacco planters, and that it is much more common to see their estates eat out by mortgages; but this proves nothing; it deserves, however, a due examination.

The tobacco planters live more like country gentlemen of fortune than any other settlers in America; all of them are spread about the country, their labour being mostly by slaves, who are left to overseers; and the masters live in a state of emulation with one another in buildings, (many of their houses would make no slight figure in

in the English counties) furniture, wines, dress, diversions, &c. and this to such a degree, that it is rather amazing they should be able to go on with their plantations at all, than they should not make additions to them: such a country life as they lead, in the midst of a profusion of rural sports and diversions, with little to do themselves, and in a climate that seems to create rather than check pleasure, must almost naturally have a strong effect in bringing them to be just such planters, as foxhunters in England make farmers. To live within compass, and to lay out their savings in an annual addition to their culture, requires in the conduct a fixed and settled œconomy, and a firm determination not to depart from it, at least till a handsome fortune was made. This would not be long, as a slight calculation will shew.

First year of increase.

	l.	s.	d.
Saving of the last,	175	0	0
Four negroes at 50l.	200	0	0
Implements,	10	0	0
Expences on negroes,	12	0	0
Addition to buildings,	20	0	0
Sundries,	8	0	0
	£. 250	0	0
		Pro-	

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 239

	l.	s.	d.
Produce 20l. a head, - - - - -	80	0	0
Annual saving, - - - - -	175	0	0
	£. 255	0	0

Second year.

Six negroes at 50l. - - - - -	300	0	0
Implements, - - - - -	20	0	0
Negroe expences, - - - - -	30	0	0
Sundries, - - - - -	10	0	0
	£. 360	0	0

Produce 10 at 20l. - - - - -	200	0	0
Annual saving, - - - - -	175	0	0
	£. 375	0	0

Third year.

Eight negroes at 50l. - - - - -	400	0	0
Expences on 18, at 3l. - - - - -	54	0	0
Implements bought, and additional repairs, - - - - -	30	0	0
Sundries, - - - - -	16	0	0
Building, - - - - -	10	0	0
	£. 510	0	0

Produce 18 at 20l. - - - - -	360	0	0
Annual saving, - - - - -	175	0	0
	£. 535	0	0

Fourth year.

Ten negroes at 50l. - - - - -	500	0	0
Expences, &c. 28 at 3l. - - - - -	84	0	0
Carried over	584	0	0

240 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

	l.	s.	d.
Brought over	584	0	0
Implements,	40	0	0
Building,	30	0	0
Sundries,	20	0	0
Clearing land,	26	0	0

£. 600 0 0

Produce 28 at 20l.	560	0	0
Annual saving,	175	0	0

£. 735 0 0

Fifth year.

2000 acres more land patent fees,	40	0	0
Another overseer,	40	0	0
Buildings,	50	0	0
Clearing land,	100	0	0
Implements,	50	0	0
Sundries,	30	0	0
8 negroes at 50l.	400	0	0
Expences on them,	102	0	0
Allow the planter,	48	0	0

£. 860 0 0

Produce 34 at 20l.	680	0	0
Annual saving,	175	0	0

£. 855 0 0

Sixth year.

Overseer,	40	0	0
Clearing land,	50	0	0
Implements,	50	0	0

Carried forward 140 0 0

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 241

	l.	s.	d.
Carried forward	140	0	0
Sundries,	40	0	0
15 negroes at 50l.	750	0	0
Expences, &c. 49, at 3l.	147	0	0
Allow the planter,	28	0	0
	£. 1095	0	0
Produce 49 at 20l.	980	0	0
Annual saving,	190	0	0
	£. 1170	0	0

Seventh year.

Account of the whole plantation.

Province taxes,	40	0	0
Expences on 72 negroes at 3l.	216	0	0
Repairs of implements,	50	0	0
Housekeeping,	300	0	0
Building and furniture,	50	0	0
Overseers,	80	0	0
House servants,	30	0	0
Incidents,	50	0	0
Interest,	94	5	0
	£. 910	5	0

Produce.

72 negroes at 20l.	1440	0	0
Cattle,	150	0	0
Fruit and sundries,	50	0	0
	1640	0	0
Expences,	910	5	0
Remains,	£. 729	15	0

Hence it appears, that he can either continue the increase of culture, with a view

to grow rich as soon as possible ; or he may stop, and at the same time that he spends 300 l. a year in manufactures, and foreign luxuries, may lay up 729 l. 15 s. a year : or else he may here begin a second system of increase ; taking the annual sum of 729 l. for the foundation in the manner before explained, which would soon accumulate into a great income.

To all accounts of that sort, there may be many objections made, in all countries, and in all branches of culture — and it would be the same if the account had been actually realized by a planter ; but slight variations should not be attended to : and the greatness of this profit will admit of deductions, according to more accurate ideas, and yet the remainder be far more than sufficient to prove that the poverty of the planters is not necessary to their condition, but merely owing to their extravagant way of living. In most articles of life, a great Virginia planter makes a greater show, and lives more luxuriously than a country gentleman in England, on an estate of three or four thousand pounds a year. The great object I labour to prove, is, that this branch of agriculture, under its present circumstances, of price of negroes, and

and price of product, is such as will admit of great profit—to the capability of making a considerable fortune ; and this advantage to be gained while the planter shall live in the midst of all the conveniencies of life, and most of its agreeableness !

I must own I am very solicitous to have this point well understood, for upon it much of this country's interest depends. Tobacco is one of the most valuable commodities that is produced by our colonies, perhaps the most so ; and therefore the great advantages of selling in these parts should be well known. Settlers are always going to America, but those who go to the north of these provinces can raise no commodities that are of consequence to Britain : all the corn and provisions that the West Indies wants, can be more than raised in the tracts from New York to Florida ; and lumber is had in plenty in the southern ones, as well as in the northern ; new settlers, therefore, going to colonies that have not a staple, is going where they can be of little use to Britain, and their making a choice so disadvantageous to the mother-country, can only arise from a want of knowledge of the real state and improvements of the tobacco colonies ; since in the

back parts of these they will find that healthy and agreeable country which attracts them in Pennsylvania ; as to the more southern colonies we are not to expect many to go to them, because the heat is too great to be agreeable to British constitutions. Since, therefore, tobacco culture is that which suits the central country, which is free from the intense cold of the northern colonies, and the oppressive heats of the southern ones, and at the same time is in possession of a staple highly valuable to Britain, and profitable to cultivate, they are necessarily the country which should be so well known as to induce settlers to make it their choice. The poverty of the planters here, many of them at least, is much talked off, and from thence there has arisen a notion that their husbandry is not profitable : this false idea I have endeavoured to obviate, and to shew that the cause of it has little or no reference to their culture, but to the general luxury, and extravagant way of living which obtains among the planters—a circumstance which ought rather to occasion a contrary conclusion ;—a supposition that their agriculture was very valuable ; for men without some rich article of product cannot afford, even

even with the assistance of credit, to live in such a manner: it must be upon the face of it a profitable culture, that will support such luxury, and pay eight per cent. interest on their debts. What common culture in Europe will do this?

The observation I made on settlements in Pennsylvania, are applicable in the present instance. It is not so much the profit which the farmer makes on his land, as the ability he has of extending his culture, in proportion to the money he makes. This cannot be done in Britain, nor in any cultivated country, but is the glory of America. If a man makes twenty per cent. on his agriculture in England, and lays by 500 l. a year; he can get only four or five per cent. for that saving of 500 l. he cannot lay it out in an increase of culture. But let him do the same in America, and he is able every year to increase his husbandry in whatever proportion his money will allow: this is making compound interest of his savings, and will, under a thousand disadvantages, accumulate presently into a considerable fortune, in comparison with the sum the planter first began with. This is a point which should never be forgotten, and in which consists the great superiority

of America. It is not sufficiently considered by those who decry the profit of the Virginia planters, because they are not rich. They enjoy advantages which would make any set of men rich ; but if instead of applying their money to making use of those advantages, he spends it in temporal enjoyments of living, dress, and equipage, he, nor the by-stander cannot, with any degree of propriety, charge that to the agriculture of the province, which is in fact owing to the private expences of individuals.

Before I quit these observations on this part of the husbandry of Virginia and Maryland, I should remark, that to make a due profit on tobacco, a man should be able to begin with twenty slaves at least ; because so many will pay for an overseer : none, or at least very few, can be kept without an overseer, and if fewer than twenty be the number, the expence of the overseer will be too high ; for they are seldom to be gained under 25 l. a year, and generally from 30 to 50 l. But it does not follow from hence, that settlers are precluded from these colonies, who cannot buy twenty negroes ; every day's experience tells us the contrary of this ; the only differ-

difference is, that they begin in small ; and either have no slaves at all, or no more than what they will submit to take care of themselves ; in this case, they may begin with only one or two, and make a profit proportioned to that of the greater number, without the expence of an overseer. This is exactly similar to the conduct of English husbandry ; a great farmer will employ a bailiff at the expence of 40 or 60l. a year ; but this is far enough from preventing others from farming, who occupy no more than they can cultivate with their own hands, or with the assistance of only one man. Settlers of all kinds fix in these colonies, with advantages as great, if not greater, than any others. The culture of corn and other provisions, is as profitable here as any where else ; and plantations are every day left by tobacco-planters, who quit and sell them at low prices, in order to retire backwards for fresh land, to cultivate tobacco to advantage ; besides which, the new country is to be had here, equally with any other province, and upon terms as advantageous.

It is no slight benefit to be able to mix tobacco-planting with common husbandry ;

R 4 this

this is as easily done as can be wished, and is indeed the practice of the greatest planters. A man may be a farmer for corn and provisions, and yet employ a few hands on tobacco, according as his land or manure will allow him. This makes a small business very profitable, and at the same time easy to be attained, nor is any thing more common throughout both Maryland and Virginia.

C H A P. XVI.

Observations on the waste lands of Great Britain—Not applicable to the same profit as those of Virginia—Reasons—Are superior in the hands of their owners—Remarks.

I AM sensible that an objection may be made to the preceding recommendations of settling in Virginia, &c. upon the principles of the superior, or at least equal advantages of settling on the waste lands of Britain; the great benefit of the American wastes is the capability of enlarging the husbandry at pleasure proportioned to the money which the farmer has annually to lay out: agriculture in the cultivated parts of Britain has nothing equal to this advantage, but the identical circumstance is to be found in the moors and other wastes of Britain; this therefore is a case in direct opposition to that of the colonies, and consequently deserves examination here.

In the plantations every man, however low his condition and rank in life, can obtain on demand, and paying the settled fees,

fees, whatever land he pleases, provided he engages to settle on it in ten years a certain number of white persons; and when he has got his grant, it is a freehold to him and his posterity for ever. In this circumstance nothing can be more different, or in more direct opposition than the two cases. The wastes in Britain are all private property, generally belonging to men of fortune, who, so far from being ready to make presents of them to whoever demands them, will scarce be prevailed on to let them on long leases: but suppose they gave leases at a trifling rent, they would not build and enclose them, and that is too great an expence here for a new settler, who could build a handsome house in Virginia for less than a beggarly cottage would cost in England. Thus therefore there are many essential reasons for mens preferring the wilds of America to the wastes of Britain, in relation to the state of the land; and the ease and plenty of living makes another object highly advantageous in Virginia, but by no means so in Britain.

The pleasures of being a land owner are so great, and in America the real advantages so numerous, that it is not to be wondered

wondered at, that men are so eager to enjoy, that they cross the Atlantic ocean in order to possess them ; nor is it judicious to draw comparisons between our British wastes and these, between which there is no analogy in those essential circumstances that are the foundation of the great population of America ; and at the same time that this is the case with our waste lands, it is the same with our cultivated ones which are equally different.

It is true that many of the good farmers in Britain will make more per cent. for their money than is done in America ; but this singly is not the enquiry : in all the articles of living while the money is made, the state of the farmer and planter is very different : the one lives penuriously and with difficulty, the other on comparison riots in plenty ; the poorest villager in some of our colonies lives better than a farmer of 200 l. a year in Britain, that is frugal enough to save money. Besides this what a difference there is between living in one case on their own freehold, and in the other on the grounds of a landlord ! But the great point is the advantageous disposition of the savings or other money which a Virginia planter can apply annually

ally to an increase of culture ; this is a point deserving the highest attention.

At the same time that I have been so clear in stating the superiority of Virginia in these cases, I must form an exception which is that of the landlords farming their own wastes in Britain : in this case they enter at once into most of the advantages of America, and with a power of making yet greater profit ; for they may improve them in any quantities, and by building farm-houses, let them in farms very soon after the breaking up, in which rotation they will make a profit of many more per cent. than is commonly made any where in America ; especially if he proceeds in the work of improvement upon the plan of taking in land enough to form a farm every year, and to let one every year. In this manner from 3147l. capital, 62,066l. may be made in eleven years on moors *. From 9558l. capital, 142,294l. may be made in eight years †. From 1781l. the lowest sum that can be thus employed, 12,000l. may be made in fifteen years ‡. This writer seems to think such a work might be as well executed by a renter as

* So stated in the *Farm. Lett.* Vol. II. p. 189.

† P. 224. ‡ P. 263.

by a landlord: but this does not by any means appear; for the latter I think the reasoning clear, but not for the former, since difficulties may be found at setting out, in procuring the land; it is not every landlord would let his wastes on *long* leases, at rents *low* enough. Other sorts of wastes are calculated in the same book to yield an equal and superior profit.

This immense profit to be made by improving British wastes turns on the very circumstance which makes husbandry so advantageous in America; the plenty of land enabling the farmer to extend himself annually: this is the great object that will be found uniformly profitable through every part of the world; and as wastes in Britain are plentiful enough, there is no reason for general assertions, that land is plentiful in America but dear in Britain, since it is plain this is applicable only to those who want to buy or hire, but to those who are already the possessors, many have in Britain as much as they could have in America, and far more than they know what to do with.

Before I conclude this chapter I shall remark, that the quick population of the American wastes, and the desolate state of
the

the British ones, form a contrast which deserve attention in the legislature of this island: I have shewn that the reason of one country peopling and improving so quick, and the other being quite at a stand, is lands being given away in America, or next to it, and not to be had at all in Britain; for very few will be induced to sell land absolutely waste, the price it brings being too small, and vanity of possessing many acres (however wild) great in every one. Thus there being plenty of land in Britain as waste as that of America, is no object, unless those who are desirous of possessing it in the latter country could get it equally easily in the former one.

But as the improvement of the wastes of a kingdom is ever an object of the highest consequence, particularly to population, the legislature might easily devise a method if not to cure the whole evil, at least to do much good: and this would be to appoint an office to buy up all the waste land that accidentally came to market in the three kingdoms, and to settle large families on little farms in them, giving them as freeholds for ever, with a reservation of a quit-rent; not sufficient to pay the interest of
the

the purchase, but to lessen the expence if it was too great—but as long as it was kept moderate, no quit-rent at all should be taken, since the object of peopling great tracts of waste land, in the heart of a country, is of much more consequence than any moderate sum would be. Without some plan of this sort being executed, we may be certain the moors and wastes will never be improved, and consequently our political writers should cease declaiming on the impropriety of peopling American wastes, instead of British ones; the one can be done, the other cannot; and therefore if the peopling America is an advantage to this kingdom, as it certainly is, it ought, beyond a doubt, to be promoted, notwithstanding the inability of peopling our own wastes.

C H A P. XVII.

Exports of Virginia and Maryland—Observations—General husbandry—Defects—Improvements proposed.

TO shew the vast importance of these colonies to Great Britain, it will be necessary to lay before the reader the last accounts of their exports, from which we shall also see what proportion their common husbandry bears to their tobacco.

Tobacco, 96,000 hogsheads, at 8l.	£. 768,000
Indian corn, beans, pease, &c.	30,000
Wheat, 40,000 quarters, at 20s.	40,000
Deer and other skins,	25,000
Iron in bars and pigs,	35,000
Sassafras, snake-root, ginseng, &c.	7,000
Masts, plank, staves, turpentine, and tar,	55,000
Flax-seed, 7000 hogsheads, at 40s.	14,000
Pickled pork, beef, hams, and bacon,	15,000
Ships built for sale, 30 at 1000l.	30,000
Hemp 1000 tons at 21l. (besides 4000 tons more and 2000 of flax worked up for their own use,	} 21,000
Total	1,040,000

Upon this table I must observe once more, how extremely important these colonies

lonies are to the mother country. To raise above a million sterling, the greatest part of which are true staples, and the rest necessary for the West Indies, with no fish, whalebone, oil, &c. commodities which some of the colonies have run away with from Britain, by rivalling her in her fishery—possessing no manufactures, even to such a degree that all attempts to bring the people into towns have proved vain. By manufactures, I mean those for sale; for as to private families working wool, hemp, and flax for their own use, it is what many do all over America, and are necessitated to do, for want of money and commodities to buy them. A colony so truly important, I say, deserves every attention from the mother country, and every encouragement to induce settlers to fix in it.

But in this list of exports one article appears which demands particular attention, I mean hemp. To the north of these colonies, none is exported; on the contrary, they import from Britain the hemp which we import from Russia, which is brought from the Ukraine, paying this immense freight; a proof strong enough that they cannot raise it. In Virginia and Maryland

the soil is much better than to the northward, and will yield it, which we find it does in large quantities, even to the amount of 100,000l. an amount that is near a seventh of their tobacco, besides flax. This is the commodity of all others which we most want from our colonies, for it is so necessary for our navy, that we ought certainly to have it more within our own command than it is at present; and the purchase carries away immense sums of money annually: to raise it therefore in America, and purchase it with our manufactures, is an object of the greatest importance. It is evident that if we are to expect hemp, it must be from this part of that continent; and consequently here we should give our great attention. It is also a matter of great importance to settlers, to know that the climate and soil of the country will do for so valuable a product as hemp as well as tobacco; and their management is such, that both may be cultivated to advantage on the same plantation; and it is well known, that in America the profit on hemp, when land is found that will produce it, is as great as that on tobacco.

The

The latter plant thrives best on a rich, deep, black mould that is dry, and upland : but hemp loves the same soil in low lands, that have a good degree of moisture in them. Very many tracts of land are yet to be had in the back parts of Virginia, which contain both sorts in plenty, and would consequently do well for the cultivation of both these products. A situation for hemp requires water-carriage as well as tobacco, being a bulky commodity.

	l.	s.	d.
Hemp per ton, - - - - -	21	0	0
Tobacco, - - - - -	16	0	0
Wheat, at 30s. a quarter, - - - - -	7	10	0
Indian corn, barley, pease, beans, &c. at } 16s. a quarter, - - - - -	4	8	0
Indigo, at 2s. 6d. a lb. - - - - -	280	0	0
Ditto at 5s. - - - - -	560	0	0
Silk, at 20s. a lb. - - - - -	2240	0	0
Wine, - - - - -	20	0	0

Such a scale of value per ton should always be attended to by new settlers: from hence it is apparent, that indigo may be cultivated without water-carriage; or at least will bear a considerable land-carriage to get at water, because the expence of moving it will bear very little proportion to the value: but the Indian corn, pease, &c. being worth but 4l. 8s. a ton, the carriage must necessarily be that of water alone, as the value is too small to bear an expensive

carriage : even wheat is in the same predicament ; at 30s. a quarter I should not suppose it would ever bear a land-carriage of above ten or twelve miles in order to get at water. Hemp and tobacco will pay it much better, and will allow of being brought much farther by land. The writers on American affairs have, respecting navigations, confined themselves to the circumstance of the bulkiness of hemp and tobacco ; but the value per ton is the only object that deserves attention ; and we find that upon comparison with any sort of corn, hemp and tobacco is of a value that will bear some carriage, though not a very long one. In Virginia the planters are many of them able to ship their tobacco at their doors : this great advantage, which is of equal importance in all other productions as well as tobacco,—in silk, indigo, &c. it is the same ; this advantage has made it supposed a necessity ; but there are many plantations in which they think a navigable river for sloops and boats, of great importance to them ; and not a few have not even this.

The culture of hemp in several circumstances of expence and produce has a resemblance with tobacco. In the richest
 foils

soils of England it takes from three and a half to four acres and a half to produce a ton, which is worth from 28l. to 35l. And the labour upon an acre amounts to from 3l. 10s. to 5l. This is less than what I supposed tobacco would cost in England; consequently we may determine that hemp is cultivated in Virginia by negroes at an expence something less per acre than tobacco. One negroe manages three acres of tobacco, and would, therefore do the same or better in hemp, which, to produce the same as in England, would be near a ton, or 21l. the price in America; this exceeds tobacco. That this calculation does not exceed the truth we may find by an expression of Dr. Mitchell's, speaking of the lands on the Ohio and Mississippi, "Every labourer," says he, "might cultivate TWO ACRES or more in hemp, and ONE OR TWO in indigo, the produce of which would be worth from 30 to 40l. a year*." Now if they could manage two in hemp, and one or two in indigo, we may fairly conclude they might cultivate three in hemp: and this makes hemp more profitable to the

* *Present State*, p. 248.

planter than tobacco: but supposing them only on a par, it is an object of no slight importance to know, that those lands which are not perfectly adapted to tobacco, may be made equally profitable under hemp.

The wheat and other corn which is among these exports, are raised principally on old tobacco plantations that are worn out for that plant without the assistance of much manure. This is a point which deserves attention: exhaust the lands in these colonies as much as you will with tobacco, you will leave it in order for grain, which is a matter of great consequence to the settlers; since corn is there a very profitable article of culture, and upon the rich lands of this country will (even after tobacco) yield large crops, with very little assistance from manure.

The usual course of the business has been the planters exhausting the land first with tobacco, and then retiring backwards with their negroes in quest of fresh land for tobacco, sell their old plantations to new comers, who have not money enough to go largely into tobacco with negroes, and therefore confine themselves to common husbandry: and this is upon the whole very advantageous. Planters who meet with

with very rich fresh woodland, employ themselves so eagerly on tobacco, as scarcely to raise corn enough for their families, in which case their little neighbours are very useful to them in felling it. This does not however seem to be good management, as tobacco employs the negroes only in summer: indeed they may occupy the winter entirely in clearing fresh land.

Tobacco and hemp, I have already given as good an account of as my intelligence will allow: but the common husbandry of these provinces demands the same attention. Wheat they sow as we do in England in October; about two bushels to an acre, which produces seldom less than twenty-five; sometimes thirty-five and forty. Rye they do not cultivate much, as their lands are in general good enough to give them great crops of wheat. Barley produces from twenty-five to forty bushels: oats from 30 to 60: pease from 10 to 60: Indian corn seldom less than 50, and sometimes 80. Turneps and cabbages thrive in the greatest luxuriance, and produce crops far beyond any thing we know in Britain. Potatoes also, with good management, yield without any dung, crops much greater than can in these islands be

gained by the force of manuring: yet are the farmers of these colonies most inexcusably negligent in not giving these crops due justice, in properly preparing their land, and keeping them during their growth free from weeds. If the fertility of the soil and climate was well seconded by the knowledge and industry of the planters, the crops would be much greater than they are, and husbandry would prove the most profitable business in the known world. But the planters, who have the power of being good cultivators of their fields, abandon them to the overseers of their negroes, and pursue only their own pleasures—and others, who may have more knowledge, have not the substance to make improvements: it is the same in Britain, and probably in every other part of the world. The foregoing account of the products of the crops of common husbandry, is sufficient to shew the immense profit which might be made by agriculture in this country, if it was followed with understanding and spirit: for want of these necessary ingredients, twice the land is run over to produce that which half of it would be more than sufficient for, under scientific management.

In

In the systems of crops generally pursued here, the farmers go upon the bad ideas of their brethren to the northwards; they take successive crops of corn, till the land will produce no more, then they leave it fallow for some years, and serve fresh ground in the same manner: all the inconveniences which I have mentioned in preceding articles result from this, but the plenty of land seduces the planters to act thus contrary to their own interests. The summers in Virginia and Maryland being hotter than in Pennsylvania, this method must be still worse than there, because the land they leave in this manner fallow must be the longer before it acquires a turf to support cattle: this shews the necessity, if the farmer would make the most of his grounds, of leaving the land in tolerable heart; and with the last crop of corn sowing grass seeds that are adapted to the climate. Good meadows are very scarce, except where water can be thrown over them, a husbandry not practised near so much as it ought.

In the management of their woods, they have shewn the same inattention to futurity with their neighbours; so that in the old settled parts of the provinces, they begin

gin to fear a want of that useful commodity, and would have felt it long ago, had they not such an immense inland navigation to supply them. The woods, upon a tobacco plantation, must be in great plenty, for the winter employment of the slaves, or else the planter's profit will not equal that of his neighbours.

Their fences are extremely incomplete, and kept in very bad order: all their attention is to secure the tobacco-field, but the rest of the plantation is never in this respect kept in the order that it ought to be: this is another evil occasioned by plenty of land; they will grasp at more than they have money to cultivate, even upon the tobacco system, which requires plenty; and then they are forced to manage it in a slovenly manner.

Cattle might be made an article of great profit in these provinces: the planters are obliged, on account of manure, to keep great stock; but they are little attentive to make the most advantage of them, either in the raising manure, or in the management of the beasts themselves. The breed they think little of improving; and their treatment of their horses and oxen, for draft, is such as would move the ridicule
of

of the smallest farmers in England. These are points which they mistakenly think of little importance, giving all their attention to the tobacco; but with better management these objects would prove so profitable as to shew that they demanded no less conduct than their principal crop. In the article of raising manure, particularly, they might make five times their present quantity, which would be attended with a corresponding increase of their staple in some of their fields; but for want of knowledge in this essential part of their business they lose much.

There are some improvements in the rural œconomy of these provinces, which demand particular attention, for they would admit of more and greater, than any of our other plantations. Under the article tobacco, I remarked several alterations which would render that culture much more beneficial; of which the effect of general good management, enabling them to keep more land under that staple, is an essential article, which would make a vast difference in the interest of Britain. No object in the American department is of such consequence; and this should induce the administration to take whatever measures that
could

could be desired, in order to improve the agriculture of these provinces. Means might be invented which would introduce by degrees better ideas.

Among the articles of improvement, which are the most obvious, there is nothing which demands greater attention than the culture of silk. None of our colonies enjoy a climate so well adapted to the purpose: mulberry trees are found every where in profusion, and the work of winding the silk, and attending the worms, might be carried on without any material interruption of their tobacco culture; but the advantage of making silk, is its being in a great measure proper for uniting with almost any business, since women, old, infirm, persons, and even children, make as good a figure in it as the most robust men, a point of vast consequence. The common objection is, the want of hands; but that seems to be made by persons who are not acquainted with the business: five or six weeks in a year would be sufficient for the work, and a family of a moderate number might, it is very well known, make 40 or 50 l. a year, which would at once be 40 or 50 l. sterling a year to them, an object of equal consequence with any that could be found. It is

is supposed that the number of people in the tobacco colonies does not fall short of 800,000; if silk was well understood among them, it would be no difficult matter to have from them as many pounds of silk, without any deduction from their tobacco; but if only 500,000 l. were made, it would add exceedingly to the wealth both of Britain and the colony.

In a country newly settling, or settled, people really cannot spare either the time or attention, small as it is, for making silk; but the case is very different in Maryland and Virginia, which are in a great measure well peopled countries, compared to several of our colonies. The people are numerous enough to make it an object of consequence, and are in general sufficiently at their ease to render the undertaking as profitable as it is in Italy or China. I cannot but attribute the remissness shewn in this article, to a want of people, or of time, but merely to that of attention and knowledge. They are unacquainted with the conduct of the worms, and the winding of the silk, and probably think it a more troublesome business than it is, and one which is of much longer duration. But this ignorance might soon be banished,

7

if

if persons skilled in the culture were sent from Europe to instruct them; a few, moving through these provinces, and shewing the women the management (which is a matter of entertainment rather than of labour) would in a few years make it familiar to abundance of families. The importance of silk from our colonies, is an object that well deserves some expence, it will pay excellently for it; since there is great difference between paying for our raw silk with money, and buying it with our manufactures.

Another article to be mentioned here, is the culture of vines, for which the back parts of Virginia are as well if not better adapted to than those of Pennsylvania: wine is another commodity which the nation is in as great want of from the colonies as any other, for the sums paid by this kingdom to France, Spain, and Portugal, for this production of their lands, are immense. There is the greatest reason to suppose, that vineyards would thrive here advantageously, from the uncommon plenty of wild vines found in the woods thro' all the back country. The planters know not what would be the effect of culture on these vines, though the grapes at present will

will not make good wine, yet is there no reason to think that cultivation, upon approved principles, would not render them of a quality sufficiently excellent? The richest vineyards of Champagne and Burgundy, left wild, would, it is well known, produce a wine far enough from the flavour of those celebrated ones: it is ploughing between the rows, dressing, and pruning, that gives the flavour to the grapes; and why should not the same causes have the same effect in America? But the trial upon a large scale, and executed with the requisite skill and spirit, would prove this: for attaining so excellent a purpose, it would be necessary to plant a large vineyard, in a proper situation, respecting aspect and soil, and to cultivate it by hands brought from the vine-countries of Europe. At the same time, divisions should be allotted to sets of European and Madeira vines, of various sorts; by which means it would be found with certainty what the soil and climate would yield in this article of husbandry. Probably the native wine would, with culture, produce the best wine, from its agreeing with the peculiar climate of North America.

In

In all colonies, government should be at the expence of a large plantation, for the valuable purpose of making experiments on those products, which are desired to be produced. Thus in the back parts of Virginia, in such a plantation, should be cultivated vines among other articles : by such a conduct, that certainty would be gained which we want at present. The Society for the Encouragement of Arts Manufactures and Commerce, have offered some very sensible and patriotic premiums for planting the largest quantity of setts in various districts : such endeavours can never be too much commended ; but at the same time it wants not much sagacity to foresee that the effect must be very trifling : such premiums may be easily gained, without the knowledge that is desired ; for suppose a certain number of setts planted (not amounting to any thing like a sufficiency for one tenth of a vineyard) this is but of little consequence, if the succeeding management is not duly and spiritedly performed, and by persons skilled in the vineyard culture ; points which it is not to be supposed will be attended to by the accidental persons that may be candidates for
such

such premiums. And how is the society, or any persons in England to know, whether the person who plants the greatest number of setts, is situated in the most favourable spots—or possesses a soil equally proper with many other tracts in the province? All such experiments should certainly be encouraged, but there is very little reason to believe that they can be attended with any great effect.

The want of people is urged in this case, as well in that of silk; and I own with much more reason, since population is more necessary for the management of vineyards, than for that of silk-worms; but in answer to this, I should propose the employment of negroes. Why should not they be instructed in pruning and dressing vines, as well as pruning and picking tobacco, or the operose performances they execute in the culture of sugar, in the manufacture of which there is very great dexterity requisite, so that negroe boilers, &c. have been sold for above three hundred pounds a-piece, when experienced in the work. There can be no doubt but they might be employed in the culture of vines equally well, and perhaps to great advantage; this is a point of importance which should be

well attended to, for the vineyard culture requires many hands, of some kind or other; and as the colonies have not the common population (except in certain districts) sufficient for the purpose, vine planters would be under a necessity of depending for at least much of the work on slaves, the number of which can be multiplied at pleasure to any amount. In the article of cooperage, the Virginians would have great advantage over the vine countries of Europe; their woods would yield them staves, hoops, and heading upon the spot, instead of sending those articles to the West Indies. The length of freight from America to England might easily be remedied, by favouring the import at the custom-house; perhaps it would be proper to exempt them for some time from all duties.

I have in several parts of this work mentioned the great importance of raising hemp in our colonies, and at the same shewn the the difficulties which have prevented any export of it, except the tobacco colonies; these are principally the want of good land, or plenty of manure. But they have a native hemp in Virginia, which they call silk-grass, which might probably be made to answer many purposes of the highest

est use, if not exceed the common hemp, since the threads of it are stronger; some most excellent fabrics have been made in private families of this grass, which shew it to be perfectly well adapted to a manufacture, yet has it been quite neglected: besides this silk-grass, they have three or four sorts of native hemp, which thrive well on their poorest lands, and which have been found to answer well in culture on a small scale*.

It is impossible to know what the merit of the plants indigenous in these colonies, is, unless there was a plantation established at the public expence, under the direction of a skilful botanist, and one perfectly well acquainted with the practice, as well as the theory of agriculture. In such a plantation, improvements might be made in the culture of tobacco: vineyards might be planted and cultivated, both of the native vines, and also of foreign ones. Experiments might be made on the culture of silk. All the native plants, like those I have just mentioned, which promised any thing of utility, might be brought into culture, and trials made of

* Mitchel's *Present State*, p. 261.

their worth, as materials for manufacture. Such a plantation well supported, would be attended with some, if not all those excellent consequences which flowed from the gardens of the Dutch East India Company, at the Cape of Good Hope. Such objections may be made to the proposal I have now offered, as were doubtless made to the establishment of those famous gardens; but the company wisely rejected objections, when they did not amount to a proof that the measure was wrong; and it has accordingly turned out one of the finest monuments of the spirit of that celebrated body of merchants. Objections may certainly be made to the proposal, and the expence mentioned as a reason for not adopting a design which could not fail of being most highly beneficial; but the expence is a very poor reason against measures of this nature, unless it was urged by ministers who shewed, in all their other actions, the same spirit of œconomy which seemed to dictate such a refusal.

On another occasion I remarked, that the heat of the climate of Pensylvania burnt up the grasses of the pastures, except the low tracts over which water was thrown; this is yet stronger with Virginia and Maryland,

land, which are hotter than Pennsylvania; for this reason the culture of lucerne would, in these provinces, be attended with yet greater advantages: their tobacco and hemp demand far more manure than they can at present raise, no object therefore can be of greater importance than an increase of it. This is only to be brought about by keeping their cattle confined; if they were folded in yards, fed in the soiling way, on lucerne, they would raise greater quantities of dung than in any other method could be effected. This observation is also applicable to the winter food of cattle; the climate of these colonies is so mild, that the cattle run out all winter; which, though an amazing advantage to the planter in many respects, is yet a preventive of raising manure, for it is the confinement alone of cattle which affords that. Upon this principle the planters here ought to attend to cabbages, turneps, potatoes, &c. as well as their brethren in the more northern settlements.

C H A P. XVIII.

T H E O H I O.

Description of the Countries adjacent to the Ohio—Staples—New colony—Principles on which it is founded—Remarks.

THIS immense country, which in our maps is laid down as a part of Virginia, reaches from the eastward of lake Erie, on the frontiers of New York, in latitude 43° , to its junction with the Mississippi, in latitude $36\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$; the length of this tract, in a strait line, is not less than 800 miles. For 300 miles it bounds on the mountains, which are the limits of Pennsylvania, from which to lake Erie is an oblong of 200 miles long, by about 100 broad, which space is one of the finest parts of North America. But the territory which is here principally to be considered, is to the south of this, from the neighbourhood of Fort Pitt, to the Cherokee river, which falls into the Ohio, near the Mississippi, to the south of the former river, most of the country to the north of it belonging to the Six Nations, partly inhabited by them, and part their hunting ground.

The

The want of fresh land in Virginia, for the tobacco planters to spread themselves over, occasioned many settlers to pass the Alligany mountains, and fix themselves on the rivers that fall into the Ohio; this was so early as from 1750 to 1755. the French had in 1748 and 1749 partly usurped and secured all this tract of back country, by their forts; a plan which they afterwards brought fully into execution; and when they were informed of the step taken by the British settlers, they warned them from what they called their master's territories, and soon after by force drove them back. This was the origin of the late war; the events of which relating to this country need no recapitulation here.

Upon the conquest of Fort du Quesne, the back settlers of Virginia and Pennsylvania, renewed their emigration, and in great numbers once more passed the mountains, and settled themselves on the Ohio and its branches. Here they cleared grounds, and began their plantations; but in the latter end of 1763, a proclamation appeared, which forbid all settlements beyond the rivers, which fall into the Atlantic Ocean. But the people who had

fixed themselves on the fertile lands of the Ohio, were too well pleased with their situation to obey this proclamation, while others continued daily to join them.

The territory in which they planted themselves being without the bounds of the provinces of Virginia and Pennsylvania, the people who had settled there became soon a lawless set, among whom a licentious spirit prevailed; living without government, they had continued quarrels with the Indians, and the whole aspect of their affairs foreboded no good. The country in which they settled belonged to the Six Nations, who complained repeatedly of this invasion of their property, offering to the governor of Virginia to sell their right in all the country to the south of the river Ohio.

Their remonstrances were too much slighted, for it was several years before any measures were taken to give them satisfaction; from remonstrating they proceeded to threaten in terms severe, though not departing from respect. Then it was that a conference was held with the chiefs of these nations, and a bargain was struck: for the sum of something more than ten thousand pounds paid by government to the Six Nations, they made over all their
right

right to the tracts of country to the south of the Ohio.

This purchase was made, not with a view to encourage any settlements beyond the mountains, but only to satisfy the Indians; the tenor of the proclamation of 1763 was adhered to, and the governor of Virginia ordered to admit of no colonization within the specified limits. But such orders could not be obeyed; for the country was found so fertile and pleasant, that fresh numbers every day thronged thither; and the expediency of establishing a government over them, was found daily greater.

In this situation of affairs it was, that an association of gentlemen, principally of America, formed the plan of establishing a new colony in the lands thus purchased of the Indians; they brought into the idea some respectable merchants of London, at the head of whom was a member of the House of Commons, Mr. Walpole. They petitioned the treasury for leave to execute their plan, offering to pay to government the ten thousand pounds the whole country had cost, for the property of only a part of it, and to be at the whole expence of the civil government of the new province.

This

This petition was referred from the treasury to the board of trade, which board made a report upon the petition, in which they strongly condemned the project, offering the reasons on which they founded their opinion; reasons which were by no means satisfactory to the understanding of those who were well acquainted with the state of the colonies.

The affair then came before the privy council, in which it was debated, and a difference of opinion found, which occasioned a debate; it ended in the petition being granted; after which Mr. Walpole and his associates took such measures as they thought necessary for the establishment of their new colony.

This is the history of the transaction brought down to the present time*; the latter part is too recent to know upon what terms the proprietors portion out the lands, nor yet are the exact limits known: but the accounts we have had of the country before it was thought of establishing a colony in it, are such as will enable us to form a pretty clear idea of it. In the ob-

* Since this was written, it has been reported that some interruption has happened in the grant.

servations on the report of the board of trade on the petition of Mr. Walpole and his associates, the following circumstances are drawn up.

First, The lands in question are excellent, the climate temperate, the native grapes, silk worms, and mulberry-trees are every where; hemp grows spontaneously in the vallies and low grounds; iron ore is plenty in the hills, and no soil is better adapted for the culture of tobacco, flax, and cotton, than that of the Ohio.

Second, The country is well watered by several navigable rivers, communicating with each other; and by which and a short land-carriage of *only forty miles*, the produce of the lands of the Ohio can, even *now*, be sent cheaper to the sea-port town of Alexandria, on the river Potomack, (where general Braddock's transports landed his troops) than any kind of merchandize is at this time sent *from Northampton to London*.

Third, The river Ohio is, at *all* seasons of the year navigable for large boats like the west country barges, rowed only by four or five men; and from the month of January to the month of April large ships may be built on the Ohio, and sent laden
with

with *hemp, flax, silk, &c.* to this kingdom.

Fourth, Flour, corn, beef, ship-plank, and other necessaries can be sent down the stream of the Ohio to West Florida, and from thence to the islands, much cheaper and in better order, than from New York or Philadelphia.

Fifth, Hemp, tobacco, iron, and such bulky articles, can also be sent *down* the *stream* of the Ohio to the *sea*, at least 50 per cent. cheaper than these articles were ever carried by a land-carriage of only sixty miles in Pennsylvania;—where *waggonage* is cheaper than in any other part of North America.

Sixth, The expence of transporting British manufactures from the sea to the Ohio colony will *not* be so much as is now paid, and must ever be paid to a great part of the countries of Pennsylvania, Virginia, and Maryland.

That we may more particularly elucidate this important point, we shall take the freedom of observing—that it is *not* disputed, but even acknowledged, by the very report now under consideration, that the climate and soil of the Ohio are as favourable as we have described them; and as to
the

the native silk-worms—it is a truth, that above 10,000 weight of cocoons was, in August 1771, sold at the public filature in Philadelphia, and that the silk produced from the *native* worm is of a good quality, and has been much approved of in this city. As to hemp, we are ready to make it appear that it grows, as we have represented, spontaneously, and of a good texture on the Ohio.” In the report itself it is urged—“every advantage derived from an established government would naturally tend to draw the stream of population ; fertility of soil, and temperature of climate, offering superior incitements to settlers, who, exposed to few hardships, and struggling with few difficulties, could with little labour earn an abundance for their own wants.” This is the state of the intelligence which is to be gained from the parties concerned ; from those who petitioned, and from those who wanted the petition to be rejected, both agree as to the fertility and healthiness of the territory. But I remarked before, that the same accounts were current before a colony was thought of.

Upon occasion of the last war Dr. Mitchel was employed by the ministry to
take

take an accurate survey of all the back countries of North America, most of them being then but little known, except to the French, who were in possession of a line of forts through all North America. No person could have been more properly appointed, for he was not only able to lay down the country with exactness, but being well acquainted with practical agriculture in Virginia and Pennsylvania, he was able to understand the nature and value of those countries he should traverse. This was the origin of his map of North America, the best general one we have had : at the time it was published, it was accompanied by a bulky pamphlet, written by the Doctor, and entitled, *The Contest in America*, in which he enters into a full elucidation of the importance of the back countries, and of the fatal effects which must flow from leaving the French in possession of their encroachments. Among others he considers particularly the territory of the Ohio, and shews of how much importance it is to the planters of Virginia ; he there mentions the want of fresh lands for planting tobacco, and the necessity of their being able to extend themselves for that purpose beyond the mountains.

tains. The country is described as one of the finest and most fruitful in all America, and abounding greatly in deer, wild cows, and wild oxen; and at the same time situated in one of the finest and most healthy climates in all that country.

This account agrees also with another which was given near an hundred years ago by La Honton, who, speaking of the country to the south of lake Erie, mentions its being one of the finest on the globe, both in respect of climate and soil; it is a tract, he observes, of vast meadows, full of wild bees and deer, and the woods of vines and wild turkies.

Dr. Mitchel, in another work published in 1767, (*The Present State*) gives other particulars concerning this territory, which deserve attention; and especially in the point of affording that fresh land which is so much wanted in the tobacco colonies, where their plantations (as was shewn in the article of Virginia) are exhausted by continual crops of that product: "they will," says he, "be in a short time worn out, and when that happens, there must be an end of the tobacco trade, without a supply of fresh lands, fit to produce that exhausting weed, as well as to maintain cattle

tle to manure them, with convenient ports and an inland navigation to ship off such a gross and bulky commodity; of which there are none in all the British dominions in North America, but the rich lands on the Mississippi and the Ohio: whoever are possessed of these must soon command the tobacco trade, the only considerable branch of trade in all North America, and the only one that this nation has left" In other passages the same writer describes these lands as being of considerable depth and fertility, having a natural moisture in them, and being excellently adapted for hemp, flax, and tobacco; also that no country can promise better for silk, wine, and oil, the climate being dry, which is the contrary of the maritime parts of America, where the rains are almost continual. And from the natural plenty of grass in meadows of great extent, with the general fertility of the soil, the maintenance of all sorts of cattle would be perfectly easy, and consequently provisions would be raised with scarcely any trouble; a point of great importance when a staple commodity is cultivated; for the planter ought to be able to give all his attention to the principal article: but if he is forced to divide his

his strength for providing food for cattle, &c. he cannot raise such a quantity of his staple as if more favourably circumstanced.

In a word, this territory of the Ohio enjoys every advantage of climate and soil which is to be found in the back parts of Virginia, but in a much higher degree, the soil being far more fertile, and the climate more pleasant and more wholesome. The assertions in the observations on the report of the board of trade are strong to this point, and may be depended on, as several of the gentlemen in the association for establishing this colony have lived long in Virginia and Pennsylvania, and appointed persons to gain intelligence of all the material circumstances concerning it. From these, and the other authorities I have mentioned, it is plain, that this new colony will probably be found of the highest consequence in the production of the following commodities.

TOBACCO.

This valuable staple is cultivated in Virginia upon the freshest and most fertile lands; none can be too rich for it: a newly broken up woodland is what it most af-

fects, and is what the planters choose for it, whenever it is in their power. I before observed, that such new land was no longer in plenty in the tobacco colonies, which makes this acquisition of country of the more importance: here are immense forests upon a soil the most fertile that can be imagined, and consequently such a field for enlarging our tobacco plantations as the nation has long wanted. Such a soil may well prove an inducement to many to purchase great numbers of negroes, in order to employ them on staple productions, which in such fresh and fertile lands may safely be expected to pay them better than in the old colonies, where the good land has been for some time scarce; that is private property: there is in several of our colonies great tracts that are excellent, but this is like the wastes in Britain; plenty of land is of no effect, if it is not to be had by the new settlers without paying a large price for it. But the value of the lands on the Ohio is not disputed, the great point for tobacco is that of carriage; for it is so bulky, that if carriage is expensive, it cannot be brought cheap enough to market. The proprietors give the following account of the communication with the Atlantic. “ During the last

tain ; also that provisions and lumber may be sent from thence cheaper to the West Indies, than from New York or Philadelphia.

These accounts call for several material observations ; as to the truth of them, they are advanced in such a manner, and by such persons, that we have no reason to doubt it ; nor should I omit to remark, that the account coincides with others, particularly with the exportation which the French are well known to have carried on from the Illionois, and do at present carry on from thence. But it was never known that the mouth of the Mississippi was navigable for *large* ships ; Captain Pittman, who surveyed the river, says, a thirty-six gun frigate has gone over with her guns *out* ; but after you are over the bar, he acknowledges there is depth of water, all the way up, for *any ship whatever*. The proprietors remark, that half the 5s. 9d. is saved ; but that does not appear, as the price from Alexandria to Fort Cumberland is not changed ; but supposing instead of 4s. 2d. from Fort Cumberland to Redstone Creek, that it should be only 2s. then the total price per cwt. would be 3s. 7d. or per ton 3l. 11s. 8d. Now two hogf-
heads

heads of tobacco make a ton, which at 8l. are 16l. from which price the deduction of 3l. 11s. 8d. more than is paid by the planters near Alexandria, is too high to be submitted to, if any cheaper method can be found of conveying that product to shipping; and this cheaper method must surely be by the Mississippi, to the gulph of Florida; for if lumber and provisions can be sent by that channel cheaper than from New York or Philadelphia, as the proprietors assert, it must plainly be a cheaper way than a carriage which comes to 3l. 11s. 8d. per ton, which can never be supported by a commodity, the value of which at shipping is only 16l. a ton. The reason of this carriage being so dear, must be the number of falls above Alexandria. As to wheat and other provisions, they could never be sent by such a conveyance, five quarters of wheat are a ton, which at 20s. a quarter come only to 5l. a sum that will never bear 3l. 11s. 8d. carriage before it gets to the shipping; and if it is reckoned at 30s. or 7l. 10s. still 3l. 11s. 8d. is far more than it would bear.

Relative to the mother country, it is of very little consequence whether wheat and

provisions can be exported from a colony or not, because staple commodities alone are valuable to Britain ; but to settlers it is an object to know if all the surplus of their products can be exported to advantage. What they may be by the Mississippi is not the point at present, but certainly they cannot be to the Atlantic. By the accounts of the proprietors it is clear, that no commodity scarcely can be raised, but what may be sent from the Ohio to the West Indies. This concern of navigation is of great consequence to the tobacco planter, whose product is one of the most bulky staples of America ; and in Virginia and Maryland the convenience of water-carriage is so great, that many planters load ships at their own doors ; but this is not in common to be expected, though it seems that it might be the case along the Ohio, if once the navigation of the Mississippi be well understood from practice.

In respect of the advantages for tobacco planting, that result from a great plenty of land, enabling the planter to keep whatever stocks of cattle he wants, and to raise provision for the plantation, no country in America is comparable to the territory in question, where a country is now settling
more

more than 500 miles long, by from 2 to 300 broad, possessing, in the utmost luxuriance of plenty, every necessary of life.

H E M P.

As tobacco requires for yielding great crops a rich woodland that is rather dry; hemp on the contrary, loves a large degree of moisture, in rich low lands. Such are found in great plenty in all the valleys, between the hills, in the new colony, where the soil is natural to this production, as we may judge from the circumstance of such quantities of wild hemp being found in almost all the low lands. This circumstance shews also how well the climate may be expected to agree with it. There is all the reason in the world to think that the nation's expectations of having hemp from the colonies will at least, after so many disappointments, be answered by the lands on the Ohio. They are, it is universally agreed, of that nature which is peculiarly adapted to the production; the vales are rich, deep, moist, and so fertile that it will be many years before they are exhausted. This is precisely what has been so long wanted; for if hemp will not pay for the employment of negroes, it will never be

made an article of culture in large : secondary objects are always neglected ; it is only those of the first importance which enjoy that degree of attention necessary to make any thing succeed. The only thing to be feared, upon this principle, is the neglect of the planter, who, used to tobacco, may be so eager in raising that staple as to neglect every other. Neglect of this sort sometimes gives rise to ideas of incapacity in a country, when the fault is only in the cultivator : for this reason I cannot but regret, that the proprietors offer of ten thousand pounds should have been accepted ; they ought to have been bound to supply the navy with a given quantity of hemp, *the growth of the colony*, annually : this would have forced them to give a degree of attention to this important article, which in the present case may not be thought of. Nothing is more common in the establishment of colonies, than proprietors to make large promises at first, and afterwards to forget that ever such things were thought of. The territory of the Ohio is in no want of *encouragement* from the proprietors ; but people are so apt to move only in their accustomed line, and so averse from all useful trials and experiments, that they

they should in some cases be driven to do that which is equally for the interest of their country and themselves.

V I N E S.

Of all North America, this is the tract which bids fairest for yielding wine: the native vines are in greater plenty and variety, than in any other part; the country at some distance from the Ohio is hilly and very dry, and in some places even rocky; but these plants do not require the rocky soil near so much as European ones; for they thrive and bear well on rich deep soils.

“ We have seen, says Dr. Mitchel, fifteen different sorts of native grapes there, the like of which growing wild are certainly not to be found in any part of the world.

The ordinary sorts of these in Virginia, yield a wine so like the common Bourdeaux wine, that it is difficult to distinguish the one from the other; and from another sort, some wine has been made which was compared by good judges, both here and there, to the best that is drank.

Other sorts yield wine exactly like the Lisbon. But instead of these, they have transplanted grapes from the hills of Normandy to the maritime parts of Virginia and

and Carolina, where no one could expect them to thrive nigh so well as they do. They ripen there in the beginning and middle of August, when no one can expect to make good wine; although they yield a very good wine for present drinking. But this is the most improper for their climate of any grape that grows; neither is it the true Burgundy grape for which they got it." From hence it is easy to be gathered, if the fact was not well known, that these territories on the Ohio must be well adapted to vineyards; much more so than any maritime part of that continent; for near the sea the rains are almost incessant, whereas upon the Ohio the climate is very dry, and on the Mississippi it rarely rains. This is a circumstance extremely favourable to the vineyard culture, which never does well in a country where much rain falls: all the fine wines come from countries which enjoy upon the whole, a climate dry on comparison with others, and some remarkably so.

Wine is another commodity which will bear no long land carriage, since to become an object of exportation from America to Britain, it much be afforded at a low price; wines upon the par with the red
port

port of Portugal ought not to exceed 10 or 12 l. a pipe, prime cost, and perhaps not so much; this is 20 or 24 l. a ton; so that hemp is, in proportion of weight, as valuable a commodity. It will certainly be found, that the Mississippi must be the conveyance of both tobacco, hemp, and wine, to the sea; land-carriage will add too much to the expences: a fresh reason for the navigation of the Mississippi being immediately and accurately examined. If ships of only 100 tons could (as the proprietors assert *large* ones can) be built on the Ohio, and sent at a certain season of the year, laden to Britain with hemp, tobacco, and wine, the advantage would be the most profitable application of the timber in the world; as well as casks for the wine and tobacco.

S I L K.

All this territory abounds with mulberry trees, in an extraordinary manner; and it is very well known, that people in the new colony will soon be in plenty; the surplus of population in Pennsylvania, New York, Jersey, Virginia, and Maryland; a surplus which is great, as is well known from various circumstances before
men-

mentioned, such as numerous petitions to settle in the northern parts of New England ; repeated ones for lands on the Ohio ; and 30,000 people already settled there, even without the advantage of a government being established ; also the well known want of *fresh* lands for tobacco. If the accounts we have had from all parts of the central colonies be well considered, there can be no doubt remain that 500,000 persons at least will, in a few years, be found in this colony, since it is that tract of country which has for so many years been the object of their ardent desires. Silk therefore certainly promises to become an article of no slight consequence, *in case the people will be persuaded to give due attention to it* ; and in such cases I have often remarked, that the only sensible persuasions are examples and rewards. Every person might make a pound of silk, without interruption of their agriculture, which would be to themselves, as well as to Britain, an object of consequence ; but if the business was well attended to by whole families, who understood the conduct of it, then much larger quantities might be produced : and in such case it would be found, for the
time

time it required, one of the most valuable staples in the world.

C O T T O N.

This plant grows spontaneously from the southern parts of Pennsylvania to Florida: in Virginia they have some that is excellent, and in some respects superior to that of the West Indies, particularly for mixing with wool. Upon the Ohio, the soil, after being exhausted by tobacco, would yield large crops of this for ever; the climate is better adapted to it, and the quantity gained would be greater. Cotton is not an article of sufficient value to be the sole product of a plantation; but as a secondary object it might be cultivated with good profit. This part of husbandry is not sufficiently attended to in our colonies; the planters bestow all their time and attention to their grand staple, so as to overlook all inferior articles; but this a mistaken conduct; they can have no crop in this latitude that will employ them the whole year; the sensible management would be to have several, so as to employ their slaves on them in succession. Wheat may be the most valuable product of a British farm; but this does not prevent the farmer

mer from sowing barley, oats, pease, and beans; nor does corn in general prevent his cultivating turneps, carrots, and potatoes, which again leave time for clover and grasses: and it is to this various application of his land, that he is as much obliged for his profit, as to any other circumstance. Sawing lumber does not equal (except in the lands that must be cleared for the crops) the culture of any staple: among these secondary objects, cotton will here be found of no slight importance.

I N D I G O.

The finest indigo is that of Guatemala, the climate exceeding hot; in St. Domingo the French raise large quantities that is excellent; and in Carolina it is become a staple of great consequence: the profit depends much on the heat of the climate, as may be judged from its being cut five times in St. Domingo in a season, three or four in Carolina, and two or three in Virginia; for there is some indigo planted in that province, notwithstanding its making no figure in the exports. On the Ohio there is great reason to suppose it may be cultivated

vated to good advantage, the soil being admirably rich, and the climate superior to Virginia; but a strong proof is its having long been an article of export from the Illionois settlements, which are full as northerly as any part of the colony of the Ohio. In Carolina they plant it on their dry sands; but this is for want of such a rich, deep, black mould as is found through the new colony, where soil may make good amends for want of so hot a sun; a point which seems almost proved by St. Domingo so much exceeding Carolina, though the summers (notwithstanding the difference of latitude) are hotter in Carolina than in that island; but in the latter it is planted on fresh woodlands to prepare them for sugar, and in the former on a poor sand. This article is perfectly well adapted to the Ohio in another respect, which is that of its great value in proportion to its weight, which is so high that the price of an expensive carriage would be scarcely felt. This is a product which might (as well as silk) be sent over the mountains to be shipped in Virginia.

M A D-

M A D D E R,

An article of great importance in the manufactures in England, and bought of the Dutch in great quantities at the high price of from 80 l. to 90 l. a ton; from which we see it ranks among those that will very well pay the expence of carriage from the Ohio to Virginia. It is amazing that this article of cultivation has never been introduced in large in our colonies, though it is beyond doubt one which would agree as well with their climate as any thing they cultivate. In Europe the finest grows in Turkey, but the most in Holland, Flanders, and the Palatinate, from whence there can be no hesitation of its suiting the excellent climate of the Ohio. Madder requires a rich, deep, flexible mould; no degree of fertility is too great for it: of all soils I should suppose a new deep woodland would be the most proper for it; in this respect it would be a rival to tobacco, but then it would probably pay better for it, and in the value of the weight infinitely exceed it. In England there has been raised fifteen hundred per acre, and the expence *in labour* may be thus calculated from the totals mentioned in the account.

		l.	s.	d.
1767.	Four ploughings, -	0	4	8
	Ridging up, -	0	1	6
	Water-furrowing, -	0	1	6
1768.	Planting, -	0	18	0
	Hand-weeding, -	0	12	0
	Horse-hoeing, -	0	2	4
	Water-furrowing, -	0	1	0
1769.	Three hand-hoeings, -	1	10	0
	Horse-hoeing, -	0	3	0
	Water-furrowing, -	0	1	0
1770.	Two hand-hoeings, -	1	0	0
	Horse-hoeing, -	0	1	6
	Taking up, -	3	0	0
	Drying, at 3s. -	2	5	0
Total		10	1	6

Produce.

15 cwt. at 4l. - - £. 60 0 0

The drying, probably, at so large an expence, is peculiar to the climate of England and Holland; but on the Ohio the sun would be much superior to the stove drying, as it is for the wild madder of Turkey. I shewed, under the article of Virginia, that the expence of an acre of

tobacco in England would in labour be 6 l. 1s. 8d. and the produce is only 5l. 6s. 8d. from whence it was plain, that it is an article of culture only fit for very cheap labour, such as that of negroes ; but on the contrary we find, that madder is far more valuable : 15 cwt. indeed was the greatest crop got by one gentleman with manuring, but then other persons in the same register got 20 cwt. and even 30 cwt. without manuring, only by planting on land of superior natural fertility : where is more fertile land to be met with than the fresh grounds on the Ohio ? Now the culture of tobacco without the produce being sufficient even to pay the expence of labour of whites, is extremely profitable by slaves ; the proportion would hold with madder, and it would be found far superior to tobacco ; the expence on carriage and freight on a commodity worth 80 l. a ton would not be felt.

Rich, deep, black land, moist, but not wet, is the great article wanted for madder, or else such an immense plenty of dung, as will convert an indifferent loam into such a soil, which can be had only in three or four situations in a great kingdom : natural fertility is what we ought therefore

fore to seek ; the price of labour evidently is of no weight—yet is this circumstance, like all others in favour of America, for that the labour of slaves is as three to one cheaper than that of English labourers, was sufficiently proved by the product of tobacco ; instead of yielding a profit not answering the expence, but with negroes being advantageous enough to give fortunes to the planters, did they know how to keep the money they make.

This object of introducing madder as a staple in the new colony, in order to save two or three hundred thousand pounds a year, which we at present pay to Holland for the commodity, an absolute necessary in our manufactures, ought to be well considered. That it would thrive to admiration there, cannot be doubted, since the soil in many tracts is equal to any in the world ; and the climate very similar to that of Turkey, where it is a common spontaneous growth. No doubts therefore can be entertained of the produce ; as to labour, the above account of 10 l. in England near London would not be 4 l. by means of negroes ; and if the product was no more than 15 cwt. and the value 60 l. in London, the account in general would stand thus:

X 2

Labour,

	l.	s.	d.
Labour, - - - - -	4	0	0
Carriage from the Ohio to Alexandria, at } 3l. 11s. 8d. per ton, - - - - -	2	13	9
Freight to London at 5l. 10s. per ton, - - - - -	4	2	6
Total	10	16	3

Thus would the Ohio planter land his madder at London at nearly the same expence that labour alone stands the Surry or Kentish planter in ! If this is not an immense encouragement to them to enter deeply into the culture, nothing can ; but they will in this, [as in numerous other cases, want example, visible proof ; which can only be given them by the proprietors establishing a plantation for experiments in large, which would presently ascertain this and other points of great importance.

There is one circumstance in this culture which would make it suit extremely the usual œconomy of a plantation in North America. It is three years in the ground, and might be left four or five with proportionable profit, during which time there is nothing to do to it in winter ; all the operations it requires are over between March and October, and when taken up the drying is over in less than a month ; thus would the negroes have the whole winter to

to saw lumber, or to be employed in other articles of culture, that required winter operations: this a point much attended to in America, and particularly by new settlers; for coming to lands, great parts of which are a forest, it is of vast consequence to them to be able to convert the wood into lumber, as fast as they clear the ground, by which means they make that preparatory work pay its own charges. The great inducement to such numbers of people to settle in America, is the plenty of land; but if that land, as it generally is, is covered with timber that can be converted to no use, the expence of clearing would be too great to undertake; where they now can take up an hundred acres, they would not then be able to take up ten. Here lies one of the great advantages of that noble navigation from the Ohio down the Mississippi to the gulph of Mexico, which the proprietors assure us is a more ready and cheap conveyance, than by sea from New York or Philadelphia.

Other staples might be mentioned for this colony, which would suit it in great perfection, and which ought likewise to be cultivated, but these are the material ones. It is never advantageous to have the at-

tention of planters too much taken up with one object, as has been the case long in Virginia and Maryland; the consequence of which is, that when land fails them for their favourite staple, they have no succedaneum, but must turn mere farmers for raising corn and provisions, which has actually been the case in those two colonies; whereas by giving that attention to hemp, flax, tobacco, vines, indigo, silk, cotton, madder, &c. which English farmers give to as great a variety of products, they would be certain of some valuable staple for ever; and also be able to apply every part of their estates to some profitable purpose. Tobacco, indigo, or madder, hemp, vines, silk, and cotton, might be in culture on the same plantation, and each on a different soil. This would increase the profit of planting very much, and make the produce of negroes much more than 20 l. a-head, which is the calculation of those employed on good land in tobacco.

Under the articles tobacco and Indian corn, I have before remarked, that the reason the planters in America did not, on a given quantity of land, equal the profit of the farmer's in Britain, was their executing much work by hand labour, which
might

might as well and better be done by horse work. In Virginia, a negroe pays about 16 l. in tobacco, and 4l. in sundry articles. It will admit of no doubt, that the sums will be higher on the Ohio; but at the same time they ought by management to be carried as high as possible; which can only be done by substituting the plough and horse-hoes, instead of the spade and hand-hoe: the expence of horses on the Ohio, or in Virginia, is not what it is here, for the price of the beast is not more than a third or fourth, and his keeping not a tenth of what it is in Britain. If these ideas were adopted, their profit would rise greatly.

An English farm of an hundred acres, 60 arable, and 40 grass; or 70 and 30, or even 80 and 20, may be cultivated upon the most improved methods in common crops, by three men and four horses; and if the land is good the average product will be 4l. an acre, or 400l. a year; thus the working hands yield 133l. a piece, this is by the addition of four horses, which indeed in Britain will, if well kept, cost full as much as four more men; but taking it in that light, and call the working hands seven, the annual produce per hand will be

571. But this is quite different in America, for the four horses would not cost more than one man if a black; and if a white, 10 horses would not equal his expence: nor have I any doubt but by a proper and experienced use of horse work, every working hand might in the Ohio be made to produce 50l. or 60l. a-head at least: they would then have an assignment of many acres per head, instead of which two or three per slave is the common allowance; however, without supposing any such good management, it would be a very moderate supposition to calculate the produce per working hand, at 5l. more than in Virginia, or Maryland, which the great superiority of fresh lands, so extraordinary for their fertility, may well allow; and with the advantage of so large a range as the planters will have here, and have not generally in the old tobacco colonies, a point of vast consequence, would justify an higher idea. If madder was undertaken, a much larger sum should be named; and yet how easy to introduce this upon a plantation, and extend the culture by degrees. Silk, madder, and indigo, of each but a small quantity, or only madder and silk, being so valuable, would pay the extra
ex-

expence of carriage and freight on the other commodities ; but I shall suppose, by adopting these articles in part, each working hand to pay 25 l. and the extra expence of carriage of some articles more than is felt in Virginia. Upon this footing I shall calculate the expences of establishing a capital plantation on the Ohio ; previous to which it may not be amiss to point out to the first settlers some signs whereby they are to judge of the soil, not only here, but through all these central colonies, and also those to the southward.

The trees, which are the spontaneous product of the land, should in general be first attended to ; if they abound with fine tall, red hiccories, white oaks, chefnut oaks, scarlet oaks, tulip trees, black walnuts, locusts, mulberry trees, &c. they may be pronounced good, and the value will usually be in proportion to the size and straitness of those trees ; pines, live oaks, laurels, bays, liquid amber, and water oaks are, among others, signs of bad land ; and in general that soil will be best which is free from under-wood : nor should the planter take a few trees of any sort as his guide, but a predominancy of them in whole woods. This rule of judging must be united with
that

that of the appearance of the soil when dug into, particularly colour and depth ; the black mould on a bed of loam is best ; that on clay, good ; but the light sandy tracts are in general bad, unless they are of a dark colour, and moist, with good trees growing from them ; in that case they may be excellent ; for sands differ as much as loams ; the misfortune is, that in America the sands are generally white and dry, and produce little besides pines.

Besides tracts which may come under this description, he is farther to examine the meadows, which are composed of similar soils, but without any trees, being covered with grass ; these are to be judged by the height, thickness, and luxuriance of that grass. These tracts are common on the Ohio, and prove how valuable the country should be esteemed : they, like the woodlands, should be examined with the spade, in order to know the appearance of the soil. Besides these there are marshes or swamps, but not in great quantities, as in the maritime parts of America : the value of these depend on two circumstances, the richness of the soil, and the ease of being drained : the former is seen by the products ; cedars are good signs, though
not

not very common ; cypresses generally are found in them, and the excellency of the land perceived from the tallness, size, and beauty of their stems : as to draining, it depends on the situation, and on examining the means of carrying off the water, as in all other countries. These swamps and marshes when drained, if the soil is stiff, are the proper lands for hemp, not that it will not thrive as well on fertile uplands ; but they may be applied to other crops. There are besides these hilly tracts, and the sides of mountains, generally of a gradual ascent, but sometimes sharp and rocky ; on the latter vineyards may be planted, and also olives ; on the former indigo, tobacco, madder, if rich, if indifferent, cotton, &c.

These are the soils and sort of tracts which are to be met with in the new colony ; and I should observe that every kind of land here is equal to any in the world for the growth of wheat, maize, barley, oats, pease, beans, &c. all sorts of roots, and every kind of garden-stuff and fruit known in Europe. Of this no doubts can be entertained, when it is considered how well all these thrive in Maryland and Virginia, in the same latitude ; whereas the Ohio is more fertile in soil, and far more tempe-

temperate and regular in climate, being free from excessive heats, and those violent colds which are found in the maritime parts of the continent.

In the disposition of new plantations it is of consequence that the planters give some attention to the situation of their house and offices, a point which, in the hurry of the first building, is seldom thought of enough, not only as a matter of convenience and agreeableness, but also of health. In this continent the north-west wind brings the severe weather, and the worst seasons; a house should be well sheltered from it by wood, but instead of having any idea of shelter, planters in general attack all the timber around their houses with such undistinguishing rage, as not to leave themselves in a few years a tree within sight. For convenience, as well as health and pleasure, the best situation would be in the centre of a space of wood in form of a crescent, open to the south, and in front of the navigation which is to convey the product of the plantation, always choosing an elevated situation, yet not the top of a hill, leaving as much ascent of wood behind the building, as descent of lawn before it. At all events a spot should be chosen where the
shores

Shores of the river are high and bold, because nothing is more unwholesome than to live in the neighbourhood of a marsh or flat land that is apt to be overflowed. This in many of our colonies is not attended to, but it is because situations free from it are not very common; and in the southern ones, the rice culture makes them seek for swamps, the consequence of which is the unhealthiness so much complained of.

Agriculture is followed in so imperfect a manner in our old colonies, owing to plenty of land, that one cannot expect to see it well managed here, where land is so much more plentiful; yet do I wish to see some plantations laid out in a manner that shall obviate the objections to the careless husbandry of the Americans. I here mean particularly to hint at inclosures—not to sow or plant any piece of ground that is not well and substantially enclosed with a ditch, a bank, and live hedge; the expence would bear no proportion to the numerous advantages of it; besides that uncommon superiority in point of neatness and beauty: and in the disposition of the fields, some should undoubtedly be left occupied with the timber that is upon them, as a future supply, which will be a matter of great consequence,
not

not only to the public good of the colony, but also to the future private advantage of the planter.

And here I shall once more observe, that for gaining the requisite knowledge of so extensive a tract of so noble a country, the proprietors would act with a patriotic spirit if they were to establish a plantation in a well chosen spot, including every variety of soil for trying large experiments on the preceding list of staples, and others that might be named. The expence would not be considerable; under the direction of a sensible, intelligent overseer, who was a man of integrity; the produce would be highly sufficient, after the first expences, to pay the annual charge. In such a plantation might be introduced the culture of hemp and flax on every sort of soil, to see how far it might become the colony staple. Madder might be tried with the same design; vineyards should be planted, both of foreign and native grapes, for wines and raisins; silk should be made in large quantities; cotton tried with equal attention; and experiments made on indigo, to see how far fertility of soil in an excellent climate would make amends for the want of greater heat. The native

native hemp, flax, silk-grass, and other indigenous plants brought into culture, that their qualities might be known; these would be noble designs, and could not fail of proving of great advantage to the colony, and of doing great honour to the proprietors.

I shall now proceed with the design of calculating the expences and profit of fixing a capital plantation on the Ohio, supposing the person to move from Britain, and to have money enough for all necessary (but not superfluous) expences.

	£.
Freight and expences of a family of six persons from London to Alexandria, at 25l. }	150
Freight of 10 tons, - - -	55
One year's living or board at 20l. - - -	120
A second year's house-keeping, - - -	100
Fees of 10,000 acres at 30l. per 1000 - - -	300
Building a house, - - -	200
----- offices, - - -	150
Furniture, - - -	150
Carriage of necessaries from Alexandria to the Ohio, - - -	50
A canoe, - - -	50
Boats, - - -	15
Implements, - - -	200
Machine for rooting up trees, - - -	80
A saw-mill, - - -	500
50 horses, mares, and stallions, - - -	250
50 cows, - - -	150
50 young cattle, - - -	50
100 swine, - - -	25
500 sheep, - - -	125
Carried over £.	2720

320 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

	Brought forward	£. 2720
Poultry,	-	5
Repairs of implements,	-	50

Labour.

Attendance on cattle,	£. 30	
Bailiff, (one year)	40	
Labour in clearing 20 acres of	} 20	
wheat, at 1l.		
Ditto 40 oats, at 16s.	32	
70 turneps, at 1l.	70	
5 potatoes at 5l.	25	
On hay, mowing and making, &c.	} 30	
arpent of natural meadows,		
On fencing,	50	
Orchard and garden,	20	
Sundries,	30	
		* 347
40 negroes at 50l.	-	2000
Annual expence of negroes per	} 40	
head, overseer, 1l.		
Cloaths, 1l.	40	
Sundry expences,	40	
		160

Seed.

20 acres of wheat at 8s.	8	
40 oats at 8s.	16	
		24

Carried over £. 5306

* All these articles are usually done by negroes for a third of this expence, but they are here reckoned at the rates of the labour of white servants, that the planter may not be supposed to have nothing but blacks about him.

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 321

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward	5306	0	0
70 turneps, 1s.	-	3	10 0
5 potatoes, 8s.	-	2	0 0
		<u>5</u>	<u>10 0</u>
Taxes,	-	30	0 0
Two years interest on 5300l.	-	530	0 0
	<u>£.</u>	<u>5871</u>	<u>10 0</u>

Produce of second year.

40 negroes at 20l.	-	800	0 0
N. B. The first year of their labour reckoned 5l. a-head lower than when experienced more.			
		<u>800</u>	<u>0 0</u>

Third year.

Taxes,	-	30	0 0
Buildings,	-	10	0 0
House-keeping,	-	100	0 0
Repairs and addition to implements	-	50	0 0
Labour as before,	-	347	0 0
Seed ditto,	-	29	10 0
Incidents,	-	50	0 0
Interest of 5400l.	-	270	0 0
Allow towards carriage or freight of bulky products,	-	50	0 0
Expences on 40 negroes at 3l.	-	120	0 0
Purchase of 20 at 50l.	-	1000	0 0
	<u>£.</u>	<u>2056</u>	<u>10 0</u>

Produce.

40 negroes at 25l.	-	1000	0 0
20 ditto at 20l.	-	400	0 0
		<u>1400</u>	<u>0 0</u>

Fourth year.

				l.	s.	d.
Taxes,	-	-	-	30	0	0
Buildings,	-	-	-	20	0	0
House-keeping,	-	-	-	80	0	0
Implements,	-	-	-	50	0	0
Labour,	-	-	-	347	0	0
Seed,	-	-	-	29	10	0
Incidents,	-	-	-	40	0	0
Interest	-	-	2000	0	0	
			800	0	0	
			<u>1200</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>	
At 5 per cent.	-	-	60	0	0	
Before	-	-	270	0	0	
			<u>330</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>	
Freight,	-	-	-	60	0	0
Expences on 60 negroes at 3l.	-	-	-	180	0	0
Purchase of 20 at 50l.	-	-	-	1000	0	0
				<u>£. 2166</u>	<u>10</u>	<u>0</u>

Produce.

60 negroes at 25l.	-	-	-	1500	0	0
20 ditto at 20l.	-	-	-	400	0	0
				<u>£. 1900</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>

Fifth year.

Taxes,	-	-	-	30	0	0
Buildings,	-	-	-	20	0	0
House-keeping,	-	-	-	80	0	0
Implements,	-	-	-	50	0	0
Labour,	-	-	-	347	0	0
Seed,	-	-	-	29	10	0
Incidents,	-	-	-	40	0	0
				<u>Carried over £. 596</u>	<u>10</u>	<u>0</u>

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 323

			l.	s.	d.
		Brought forward	596	10	0
Interest,	-	-	2166	10	0
			1400	0	0
			<u>766</u>	10	0
At 5 per cent.	-	-	38	0	0
Before	-	-	330	0	0
			<u>368</u>	0	0
Freight,	-	-	70	0	0
Expences on 80 negroes at 3l.	-	-	240	0	0
20 at 50l.	-	-	1000	0	0
			<u>£. 2283</u>	10	0

Produce.

80 negroes at 25l.	-	-	2000	0	0
20 ditto at 20l.	-	-	400	0	0
			<u>£. 2400</u>	0	0

Sixth year.

Taxes,	-	-	30	0	0
Buildings,	-	-	20	0	0
House-keeping,	-	-	80	0	0
Implements,	-	-	60	0	0
Labour,	-	-	347	0	0
Seed,	-	-	29	10	0
Incidents,	-	-	40	0	0
Interest,	-	-	2283	10	0
			1900	0	0
			<u>383</u>	10	0
At 5 per cent.	-	-	19	3	0
Before,	-	-	368	0	0
			<u>387</u>	3	0
Carried over			£. 993	13	0
Y 2					

324 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

			l.	s.	d.
	Brought forward		993	13	0
Freight,	-	-	80	0	0
100 negroes at 3l.	-	-	300	0	0
20 ditto at 50l.	-	-	1000	0	0
			<u>2373</u>	<u>13</u>	<u>0</u>
			£.		

Produce.

100 negroes at 25l.	-	-	2500	0	0
20 ditto at 20l.	-	-	400	0	0
			<u>2900</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>
			£.		

Here we find the receipt is more than equal to the annual expence, including the increase of 20 negroes bought every year, consequently the whole sum wanting for such a plantation is to be ascertained.

			l.	s.	d.
First capital,	-	-	5871	10	0
Expences of third year,	2056	10	0		
Produce of second,	800	0	0		
			<u>1256</u>	<u>10</u>	<u>0</u>
Expences of fourth year,	2166	10	0		
Produce of third,	1400	0	0		
			<u>766</u>	<u>10</u>	<u>0</u>
Expences of fifth year,	2283	10	0		
Produce of fourth,	1900	0	0		
			<u>383</u>	<u>10</u>	<u>0</u>
			Total	8278	0 0
Annual interest,	-	-	413	18	0

If

If no increase of negroes, the account would be :

	l.	s.	d.
Taxes, - - - - -	30	0	0
Buildings, - - - - -	20	0	0
House keeping, - - - - -	80	0	0
Implements, - - - - -	50	0	0
Labour, - - - - -	347	0	0
Seed, - - - - -	29	10	0
Incidents, - - - - -	40	0	0
Interest, - - - - -	413	18	0
Freight, - - - - -	80	0	0
Expences on 120 negroes at 3l. -	360	0	0
	£. 1450	8	0

Produce.

120 negroes at 25l. - - - - -	3000	0	0
Expences, - - - - -	1450	8	0
Profit, - - - - -	1549	12	0
House-keeping, - - - - -	80	0	0
Interest, - - - - -	413	18	0
Total receipt, - - - - -	2043	10	0

which from 8278l. is per cent. 24l.

During the preceding time, no produce is supposed from cattle, that in so great a space of country they might increase to great herds and flocks ; but afterwards the annual product would be very great, as the numbers would be two or three thousand head of cattle, five or six thousand sheep, and two or three thousand hogs ; such

herds have been known the property of single people in North Carolina, where they have not greater advantages, nor yet so great, as on the Ohio: these would yield annually near 1000l. a year in hides, wool, and barrelled meat for the West Indies, but I shall calculate only 300l.

			l.	s.	d.
Receipt above,	-	-	2043	10	0
Cattle,	-	-	300	0	0
			£.	2343	10 0

which from 8278l. is per cent. 28l.

This profit is considerable, not so much in itself, as in the circumstance of the planters being able annually to incorporate it into the old capital, and thereby yield a compound interest at that proportion. I am of opinion, that husbandry in England will yield a greater profit than 24 l. per cent. if so large a sum as 8000l. is expended in stocking a farm. Calculations have been published of English husbandry, which shew that so high as 33 per cent. may be made in any part of the kingdom by *good* and *improved* husbandry, and above 20 per cent. by the most common crops. And I am clear, that if potatoes, carrots,

carrots, madder, hops, &c. were calculated (which do not come into those calculations) the profit might be carried to 40 or perhaps 50 per cent. in certain situations ; in this respect I am confident, that America cannot equal Britain, but in other points the superiority is entirely with her : that of the annual increase of culture is a very essential one. What a vast difference between the English farmer putting out his savings at 4 per cent. and his brother on the Ohio doing the same at 24 compound interest ! What a difference between the one living on another man's land, with a lease of twenty-one years, which is a long one, subjected to the caprice of a landlord or a steward, or sure of quitting at the end of his term, and the other living on his own extensive freehold of 10,000 acres ! What a difference between 80 l. a year spent in all sorts of necessaries, even bread, meat, malt, &c. by the farmer for house-keeping ; and the same sum by the planter for tea, sugar, coffee, chocolate, spices, rum, and manufactures. Bread, meat, venison, fruit, fish, fowl, game in the utmost plenty, besides the corn, &c. the expence of which is before reckoned, but no produce !

In all these circumstances there can be no comparison: at the same time that the Ohio planter makes near as great interest from his first capital as the English farmer; at the same time that he is able to throw his savings annually into business at 28 per cent. compound interest; he lives like a country gentleman in Britain who has an estate of 2000 l. a year, and if the latter spends half the year at London, much better; while the farmer, it is very well known, must fare very coarsely. I draw this comparison with no design to send British farmers to the Ohio. I am clear not one in the three kingdoms will go; had I thought a book would be an inducement to them, I would not have drawn up this calculation: it is written for the use of those who will go to America, whether books are published or not; and to them it is meant merely as advice, that they make a proper choice of the colony they settle in: many go to Nova Scotia, to New England, to New York, &c. where they can raise nothing advantageous to the commerce of Britain, and where they must live in a climate that is odious to a British constitution, at least during the severity of winter. There is no object in the whole
range

range of American affairs of more importance than the directing new settlers, whether from Britain or foreign countries, to those parts of our colonies, which from their staple productions are really valuable to the mother-country; yet this matter, of as great consequence as it certainly is, has not by any means been so much attended to as it ought; for government has paid the freight of more men to Nova Scotia, than it has too Virginia and Maryland; though the former has no staple, and can only rival Britain in her fishery, and the latter one so valuable in every respect as tobacco.

C H A P. XIX.

N O R T H C A R O L I N A.

*Climate of North Carolina—Productions—
Soil—Common husbandry—Staples—Ex-
ports—Defects in their agriculture—Im-
provements proposed.*

THIS province lies between lat. $34\frac{1}{2}$ and $36\frac{1}{2}$: it is hotter than Virginia, but in other respects the climate of these two provinces is very similar; North Carolina being hotter as you advance southward, until the most southerly parts are as hot as South Carolina. This gradation of heat is such as may be supposed from the variation of latitude; but not to be compared with the same parallels in other quarters of the world, no more than the other American territories. In winter they have frosts here sometimes very sharp, though not in general so cold as in Virginia; and a warm day often follows a very cold night. The same distinction is also to be made between the maritime and back parts of the province that I mentioned before in
Vir-

Virginia ; the coast, as far as it continues a flat country, is excessive hot and very unwholesome, like all the low sea-coasts in these southern countries ; but when the country rises, and begins to be hilly, which is about one hundred or one hundred and fifty miles from the sea, and continuing till you come to the western mountains, in this part the climate is pure, temperate, and healthy.

The products of North Carolina are rice, tobacco, indigo, cotton, wheat, peas, beans, Indian corn, and all sorts of roots, especially potatoes. Rice is not so much cultivated here as in South Carolina : but in the latter they raise no tobacco, whereas in North Carolina it is one of their chief articles. It grows in the northerly parts of the province, on the frontiers of Virginia, from which colony it is exported. Indigo grows very well in the province, particularly in the southern parts, and proves a most profitable branch of culture. Cotton does very well, and the sort is so excellent, that it is much to be wished they had made a greater progress in it. The greatest articles of their produce which is exported are tar, pitch, turpentine, and every

every species of lumber, in astonishing quantities.

The soil in the flat country is in general sandy, and great tracts of it but indifferent in fertility ; but others are rich, and will produce cotton, indigo, and Indian corn freely. It is in this part of the country that the swamps are to be found, which when drained yield rice : this forms a distinction between North Carolina and Virginia ; they have vast swamps on the coast of Virginia, but cultivate no rice, not because it would not grow, but from an idea that it requires, in order to yield large crops, a hotter sun. The swamps in North Carolina are some of them very rich, but remain undrained for want of people. In the back part of the country the soil is very fine, and in several tracts equal to the best of Virginia ; and it improves as you advance towards the mountains. This is the case with all these colonies in the southern parts of America. In many of these backward tracts the land is a rich black mould, of a good depth, and highly fertile, especially the country on the river Pedee, &c.

It is extraordinary that more settlements should not have been made in this country,

try, notwithstanding the obstacles I have mentioned, considering the pleasantness of it, and extreme fertility of the soil ; these circumstances were also known many years ago, as appears by the travels through it of a Mr. *John Lawson*, surveyor-general of North Carolina in the year 1700, which were published in 1718 *. There are many curious particulars in it, and especially of the appearance of the back country, as will appear from the following extracts, which I make because the book is very scarce. “ We went directly for Sapona Town : that day we passed through a delicious country (none that I ever saw exceeds it.) We saw fine bladed grass six feet high, along the banks of pleasant rivulets. Coming that day about thirty miles, we reached the fertile and pleasant banks of Sapona river, whereon stands the Indian town and fort. Nor could all Europe afford a pleasanter stream, *were it inhabited by christians*, and cultivated by ingenious hands. These Indians live in a clear field, about a mile square, which they would have sold me. This most pleasant river may be something broader than

* *The History of Carolina*, small quarto.

the Thames at Kingston, keeping a continual pleasant warbling noise with its reverberating on the bright marble rocks. It is beautified with a numerous train of swans and other water-fowl. One side of the river is hemmed in with mountainy ground, the other side proving as rich a soil to the eye of a knowing person with us, as any this western world can afford : it is as noble a river to plant a colony on as any I have met withal. Next morning we set forward ; all the pines were vanished, for we had seen none for two days. We passed through a delicate rich soil this day, no great hills, but pretty risings and levels, which made a beautiful country ; we passed likewise over three rivers this day. We were much taken with the fertility and pleasantness of the neck of land between these two branches. It is called *Haw* river, from the *Sissipahaw* Indians who dwell upon this stream ; there being rich land enough to contain some thousands of families, for which reason I hope, in a short time, it will be planted. This river is much such another as Sapona, both seeming to run a vast way up the country. There is plenty of good timber, and especially oak ; and as there is stone enough in both

both rivers, and the land is extraordinary rich, no man that will be content within the bounds of reason can have any grounds to dislike it. Some Virginia-men we met, asking our opinion of the country we were then in, we told them it was a very pleasant one: they were all of the same opinion, and affirmed that they had never seen twenty miles of such extraordinary rich land, lying all together like that betwixt *Haw* river and *Achonedry* town." Long after this account was written (viz. near seventy years) Dr. Mitchel gives it in general the same character. "There are five large rivers, says he, which rise in the inland parts of North Carolina, the banks of which are rich and fertile, although the hills between them still partake of the barrenness of Carolina, as we are well informed by several whom we have recommended to settle in the country. This seems to be the most improveable part of all the British dominions on this side of the Mississippi. But they have no navigation nor ports to the more fruitful parts of the country, if it be not by the river *Pedee*, which runs through all this inland part of North Carolina, and falls into the sea at Wineau (or Winyaw) which now belongs to

to South Carolina, and for that reason it is neglected and never used by the other, which possesses the fruitful lands belonging to this port." From all which accounts it is extremely plain that these back parts of North Carolina are to be ranked among the finest in our colonies.

Notwithstanding these great advantages, there are very few people in North Carolina; this has been owing to several causes: there were obstructions in settling it, which occasioned some to leave the country, and a general idea was spread to its disadvantage; but the principal evil was the want of ports, of which there was not one good one in all North Carolina: the river Pedee falls into the sea at Winyaw, which is in South Carolina, and that has prevented an exportation of products from thence of the growth of North Carolina. And this want of good ports, and a trading town, has checked the culture of rice a good deal; but it has had another effect, which may probably prove a great advantage; it has driven the new settlers back into the country, and thrown them very much into common husbandry, on a soil and in a climate that will do for productions much more valuable than rice; these, such as silk, indigo, and
cot-

cotton are coming in by degrees, and will in a few years change the face of this colony entirely, and enrich it prodigiously; it is this spreading about the country that makes the produce of the woods almost the staple at present of the colony.

It is this circumstance that has thrown them into common husbandry, as I observed before; and it is this common husbandry which deserves our attention particularly, since in many respects it is different from that of any other part of America.

The two great circumstances which give the farmers of North Carolina such a superiority over those of most other colonies, are, first, the plenty of land; and, secondly, the vast herds of cattle kept by the planters. The want of ports, as I said, kept numbers from settling here, and this made the land of less value, consequently every settler got large grants; and, falling to the business of breeding cattle, their herds became so great, that the profit from them alone is exceeding great. It is not an uncommon thing to see one man the master of from 300 to 1200, and even to 2000 cows, bulls, oxen, and young cattle; hogs also in prodigious numbers. Their ma-

nagement is to let them run loose in the woods all day, and to bring them up at night by the sound of a horn ; sometimes, particularly in winter, they keep them during the night in inclosures, giving them a little food, and letting the cows and sows to the calves and pigs ; this makes them come home the more regularly. Such herds of cattle and swine are to be found in no other colonies ; and when this is better settled, they will not be so common here ; for at present the woods are all in common, and people's property has no other boundary or distinction than marks cut in trees, so that the cattle have an unbounded range ; but when the country becomes more cultivated, estates will be surrounded by enclosures, and consequently the numbers of cattle kept by the planters will be proportioned to their own lands only.

It may easily be supposed that these vast stocks of cattle might be of surprising consequence in the raising manure, were the planters as attentive as they ought to be to this essential object : they might by this means cultivate indigo and tobacco to greater advantage than their neighbours ; some few make a good use of the advantage, but more of them are drawn from it by the
 plenty

plenty of rich land, which they run over, as in the northern colonies, till it is exhausted, and then take fresh, relying on such a change, instead of making the most of their manure, which would add infinitely to their profit.

Their system is to depend (where they have no navigation, and are at a considerable distance from it, which however is not the case in many parts) on the hides of their cattle, and on barrellled meat, with some corn, roots, and pitch and tar, &c. for the profit of their plantation; but the most bulky of these commodities yield but little, unless near some river; accordingly there are not many plantations at any distance from water, since it is not an inland navigation that is wanted in North Carolina, but ports at the mouths of the rivers that will admit of large ships.

The mode of common husbandry here is to break up a piece of wood land, a work very easily done, from the trees standing at good distances from each other; this they sow with Indian corn for several years successively, till it will yield large crops no longer: they get at first fourscore or an hundred bushel an acre, but sixty or seventy are common: when the land is pretty well exhausted they sow it with pease or beans one year, of

which they will get thirty or forty bushels per acre; and afterwards sow it with wheat for two or three years: it will yield good crops of this grain when it would bear Indian corn no longer, which shews how excellent the land must be. But let me remark that this culture of wheat to such advantage is only in the back part of the province, where the climate is far more temperate than on the coast; upon the latter it does not succeed well, a circumstance much deserving attention; for we may lay it down as a universal rule, that where wheat thrives well, *there* the climate is healthy, and agreeable to the generality of constitutions: it does well neither in extreme cold, nor in great heat.

In this system of crops they change the land as fast as it wears out, clearing fresh pieces of wood land, exhausting them in succession; after which they leave them to the spontaneous growth. It is not here as in the northern colonies, that weeds come first and then grass; the climate is so hot, that, except on the rich moist lands, any sort of grass is scarce; but the fallow in a few years becomes a forest, for no climate seems more congenial to the production of quick growing trees. If they planter does
not

not return to cultivate the land again, as may probably be the case, from the plenty of fresh, it presently becomes such a wood as the rest of the country is; and woods are here the pasture of the cattle, which is excellent for hogs, because they get quantities of mast and fruit; but for cattle is much inferior to pastures and meadows.

Besides these crops they cultivate all sorts of roots, particularly potatoes, of which they get large crops; some they sell into Virginia, and the rest are given to their hogs. Fruit in none of the colonies is in greater plenty, or finer flavour; they have every sort that has been hitherto mentioned in this work: peaches, as in the central colonies, are so plentiful, that the major part of the crop goes to the hogs. In a word, all the necessaries, and many of the luxuries of life abound in the back parts of this province, which, with the temperate climate, renders it one of the finest countries in America; so fine, that every body must be astonished at finding any settlements made on the unhealthy sea coast, which is nearly the reverse.

Respecting their staples, tobacco I have been so particular in treating of under the article Virginia and Maryland, that little

remains to be said here, as the management of it is the same; the climate for this plant is not better than that of Virginia; but as there are more lands that are fresh, the crops will for some time be larger: four hogheads have been made for a share here on a small plantation (near the northern forks of the river Pedee) for several years; and five have been known for a season or two in the same plantation. Such crops, and even less, would well pay the expence of sloops taking the crop to the ships at sea which cannot come into port.

Rice is cultivated only in the maritime part of the province, in the swamps. As this article of husbandry is the grand staple of South Carolina, where infinitely greater quantities are made, I shall not enter into the process here: but observe, that the planters do not make so great a profit by this article as many do in South Carolina, which may be owing to the latter country being hotter, and perhaps the swamps are somewhat richer.

Pitch, tar, and turpentine are made throughout this province in vast quantities, which is a proof, among others, that the country is very far from being well settled
even

even yet. These commodities are the produce of that species of pine called the *pitch pine*; they are all made by different preparations from the resin of this tree. Turpentine is this resin or gum as it flows from the tree through holes cut for that purpose; the heat of the sun assists this extraction, and the operation is performed while the tree is growing. It is well known that oil of turpentine is a distillation of it. From the holes cut to gain the turpentine, little channels are made in the trees to conduct the resin down to the foot of them, where boxes or bowls are placed to receive it. After the oil is distilled from the turpentine, the residuum is the resin in a very thick consistence, which is dried, and then is in the lumps we have it in England.

Tar is the same gum, but gained in a different manner; the method is as follows, which I shall give in the words of an intelligent writer: "First, they prepare a circular floor of clay, declining a little towards the centre, from which there is laid a pipe of wood, extending, near horizontally, two feet without the circumference, and so let into the ground that its upper side is near level with the floor: at the outer end of this pipe they dig a hole large enough to

hold the barrels for the *tar*, which when forced out of the wood naturally runs to the center of the floor as the lowest part, and from thence along the pipe into the barrels: these matters being first prepared, they raise upon that clay floor a large pile of dry pine wood split in pieces, and inclose the whole pile with a wall of earth, leaving only a little hole at the top, where the fire is to be kindled; and when that is done, so that the inclosed wood begins to burst, the whole is stopped up with earth, to the end that there may not be any flame, but only heat sufficient to force the tar out of the wood, and make it run down to the floor: they temper the heat as they think proper, by thrusting a stick through the earth, and letting the air in at as many places as they find necessary. In order to gain pitch they boil the tar, and the solid part being separated in that operation, is the pitch." It is found much more profitable to apply the timber they cut down to this use than to saw it, or export it in any kind of lumber; and the tar &c. being far more valuable in proportion to bulk, is a circumstance of great importance in a country that does not abound with good ports.

To

To shew what the back part of this colony is capable of, I shall insert the account of the labour of ten negroes in one year upon the plantation on the Pedee above-mentioned, premising that it is not to be taken as an *annual* product, this being an extraordinary year; the account does not contain all the circumstances I could wish, but as it is put into my hands, so I insert it.

Products raised and made by ten negroes in one year in the plantation.

	l.	s.	d.
31 hogheads of tobacco at 8l. 5s.	255	15	0
400 bushels of Indian corn and pease at } 1s. 6d.	30	0	0
114 barrels of tar at 6s. 9d.	38	9	3
Skins	8	10	0
Shingles 4000 at 12s. a 1000	2	8	0
	£. 335	2	3

which is 33l. 10s. per head, besides making corn and other provisions for the family, cattle, poultry, &c. and keeping the buildings in repair.

Upon good fresh land this may often be equalled, but doubtless there are many tracts of country in which the negroes do not equal half this profit. But if the conduct of their husbandry was well looked into, and

and their modes of culture minutely examined, the low products would be found oftner the result of bad husbandry than the fault of either soil or climate; it is so in Britain, and doubtless in a much greater degree in America. It is however of consequence to know what in good years and on good land may be done in planting tobacco; we see here a product of 25l. per head in that staple alone, besides the other articles of the plantation. This is a point at which emulation should strive to arrive; and spirited endeavours have a wonderful efficacy in gaining points; but planters, like farmers, are too often content to move on in the old line, without daring to think that a deviation can be beneficial.

The following are the exports from this province.

	£.
Rice, 2000 barrels at 40s. - - -	4000
Tobacco, 2000 hogheads at 8l. - - -	16,000
Pitch, tar, and turpentine, 51,000 barrels at 7s. - - -	17,850
Boards, staves, joists, shingles, masts, and lumber - - -	15,000
Indian corn, pease, and other grain, - - -	7,000
Live stock of different kinds - - -	5000
Skins of different kinds - - -	5,500
Total *	70,350

* *American Traveller*, pag. 89.

But

But I must remark that this account does not at all agree with another which has been given on good authority ; yet this account is drawn up for the years since the peace ; and that which I am now going to insert, for the year 1753. The former ought to be much the greatest, instead of which it is the least.

	l.	s.	d.
Pitch, tar, and turpentine, 84,012 barrels at 7s. - - -	29,404	4	0
Staves 762,330 at 4l. 5s. a 1000 - -	3,230	0	0
Shingles, 2,500,000 at 11s. 5d. per 1000	1,427	1	0
Lumber, 2,000,647 feet at 5l. per 1000	10,000	0	0
Corn, 61,580 bushels, suppose 2s. - -	6,158	0	0
Pease, 10,000 bushels, 1s. 6d. - - -	750	0	0
Pork and beef 3,300 barrels, 23s. - -	3,795	0	0
30,000 deer skins * - - - - -	5,500	0	0
Rice omitted, therefore taken from the other account - - - - -	4000	0	0
Tobacco (ditto) - - - - -	16,000	0	0
Besides wheat, bread, potatoes, bees-wax, tallow, candles, bacon, hogs-lard, some cotton, and a vast deal of squared walnut timber and cedar, and hoops and headings, also some indigo.			

Total † 80,264 5 0

There can be little doubt, from the number of articles omitted, but the total must amount to 100,000l. and it is well

* The price by tale not known, the sum is therefore taken from the first account.

† *Account of European Settlements*, vol. ii. p. 260.

known

known that this province is now making a great progress in its cultivation and exports: after being long neglected it was but little known, but since the back country has been settled, the planters have succeeded so well as to draw great numbers after them, so that there is scarcely a part of America that is at present filling faster: the new colony on the Ohio will give a check to this; had not that been established, North Carolina must have soon become as flourishing as her want of ports would allow, which must ever keep her comparatively low. The country would thrive more if their husbandry was better, but, like all the American farmers, they are spoiled for good husbandmen by plenty of land.

Among the defects of their agriculture, I shall mention in the first place, their almost total neglect of inclosures; this they carry to a degree that is not even found in the provinces I have already described. Even their corn fields are open to the depredations of their own and others cattle; nor are the fences of their rice and tobacco grounds made with that care and attention which in England is bestowed on the least valuable fields. This circumstance, wherever it is found, is a sign of extreme bad husbandry.

husbandry: it is owing to the planter being sparing of expence in every article that is not of immediate consequence; the expence of fences in Carolina, where wood grows with such amazing luxuriance, would be trifling, and the advantages of good ones too great to need expatiating on.

The system pursued here is as faulty as in most other parts of America; it consists in cropping the land with tobacco as long as it will bear it; then they will take two crops of maize, and after that throw in wheat, peas, &c. for several years longer; after which they leave the land to become forest again; as fast as they want more, they take it from the old woodland, serving it in the same manner. It is owing to this wretched system that many of their corn-fields are so full of weeds, that in some it is difficult to know what is the crop.

Even in the northern parts of the province, upon the frontiers of Virginia, where they give their principal attention to the little tobacco they cultivate, they do not manage it with any spirit; not being in several instances so good planters of that commodity as their neighbours. They do not
 see

seem so attentive to keeping the hillocks clean from weeds ; this may be owing to the general circumstance of the planters not being so rich, or having such large stocks of negroes ; for in North Carolina it is but of late years that men of property have settled in it ; and they observe in America, as well as in all other parts of the world, that the richer the cultivator, the better will the land be cultivated ; whether the crop be tobacco, rice, corn, sugar, indigo, or whatever it may. In one respect, however, they have made an improvement in North Carolina in the tobacco culture, which is the introduction of a machine between the rows of tobacco instead of a plough, being between a plough and a harrow, and something in the nature of horse-ices used in England. It is not however common tool there, but from its use, it is expected to become more general.

Another very great defect in their management, is the careless manner in which they conduct their cattle : immense herds are kept that yield a profit to the planters more inconsiderable than can at first be imagined ; this is not for want of a market, since no commodity more readily yields its price

price in North America, than beef and pork in barrels; and hides are every where a commodity easily to be turned into money; but it is owing to a want of attention—to keeping a proper proportion of them to the winter food—to not fattening them well, and many not at all, which is owing to a want of pasturage, and also to leaving them too much to themselves in the woods without a sufficiency of attendants to watch and take care of them. The mere multiplication of cattle is not the only object, though it sounds greatly; bringing them up in health and vigour, of a due size and fatness, are as essential; but the stunted diminutive size of all the cattle in North America, to the northward, as well as in the southern colonies, shews plainly the great want of pastures: cattle will live and multiply in their woods, but they will never be cattle of any value; and yielding a profit as inconsiderable as their worth.

In raising manure they are, notwithstanding their numerous herds, no less negligent. This is owing also to plenty of land; while they can get good crops of any thing on fresh land without dung, they care little about raising any; but with the advantage of fresh and good land, aided
by

by their numbers of cattle, they might very well make three and a half or four hog-heads of tobacco a share, which would be 28l. or 32l. a head, and, with lumber, tar, corn, &c. would make their slaves on an average worth at least 30l. a-piece to them, which would be a profit their neighbours very seldom reap.

As to the improvements which might be made in this colony, they are as great as in any other, if not more so, for it has been more neglected than most. What I should propose is, that the new settlers that came there should fix themselves in the very back part of all the country, upon the rivers that run among the Apalachian mountains, of which there are the Pedee with five considerable branches, Cape Fear river, and others: some of these are navigable for middling sized boats above two hundred and fifty miles from the sea coast; and it is in this country, at the foot of the mountains, where the soil ranks among the richest in America, and where the climate is perfectly temperate, healthy, and agreeable. I would not propose them to settle here to raise bulky commodities, because the navigation is not good enough to convey them away—and because there are other territories bet-

ter situated for them ; but for indigo, silk, cotton, and some other valuable commodities, no situation in all America exceeds this : here the soil is so fertile—so deep—and of such an excellent nature, that the products of indigo, &c. would be far greater than what is known in South Carolina ; and these commodities are all so valuable, that very small boats would carry the amount of a great value. Indigo and cotton would here pay at least 25l. a-head for all labouring hands, besides raising necessaries for the support of the plantation : this would prove of greater advantage to the settlers than any thing they could do with other products. The navigation of Virginia and Maryland, and the Ohio will give them a superiority in tobacco ; and the same circumstance, with better swamps, and a hotter sun, will render South Carolina superior in rice ; but in the commodities I have mentioned, the lands in question would have a yet greater superiority. Nobody disputes the excellence of the soil in the back parts of North Carolina ; it excels that of South Carolina ; and the climate is known to be equal to any in the world, being as different from the mari-

time parts of the continent, as much as Hudson's Bay varies from Jamaica.

This is an improvement which would much advance the interests of Britain, for indigo, cotton, and silk are commodities which she buys of foreigners at a great price; and if she had more than supplied the consumption of her own manufactures, they are articles of ready sale all over Europe, so that nothing more demands the attention of the mother country than such parts of her colonies as are fitted by nature to produce them. Silk can only be produced in proportion to the number of people in the country; but then it is of consequence that the inhabitants of our wide spread plantations should all make as much as they can. It is a common observation on this point of producing silk in the colonies, that the country is not populous enough to make any progress in a business that requires so many hands; but nothing can be more mistaken than such reasoning. The culture of silk is of that nature, that if there were only one solitary plantation in a whole province, the same quantity of silk might be made on it, as proportionably in a whole country, though ever so populous;

lous ; it is a business that requires only a few weeks in a year, were it therefore otherwise, it could not answer to any one to meddle with it. Every person might make one or two pounds of silk annually with very little or no interruption of their usual occupations. Hence we may assert that nothing can be more absurd than the argument of the inutility of silk because the country is not populous ; when the country becomes populous the quantity will be an object of consequence ; but if the work is not begun till then, it will probably never be begun at all : a few people in one colony, a few in another ; some thousands here, some thousands there, separately taken, the quantity of silk they could make might not be a national object ; but when all these numbers were added together, and united with the people in all the colonies, who enjoy a climate that would do for the business, the affair is then no longer a trifle : this we may be convinced of by reflecting on the numbers we have from Florida to Jersey inclusive ; in all which tract silk might be produced in any quantities the population of the country would admit of : would but all the people in this line of country make each a pound per head, it

would supply Britain with all she uses, and more, and be worth both to her and the colonies, much above a million sterling per annum.

It is upon this principle therefore that it ought to be recommended particularly to enter into the business of making silk, however thin the population; and especially in such excellent climates as the back parts of this province, at the foot of the mountains: for more than an hundred miles in breadth, quite among the mountains, the whole territory is covered with mulberry-trees; nature points out what *might* be done in this country, but if the industry of man will not co-operate, it is in vain to see these rich gifts on every side.

No part of America would be more proper for the growth of wine than this; but at present we know not of a navigation that would be sufficient for the cheap conveyance of it. Yet I should remark that the rivers in this country are not sufficiently known. Nothing is of more importance in the management of our American concerns than to know accurately how far the waters in that continent are navigable, and for what boats; surveys should

should be made of them with the greatest care possible: tracts of country may be neglected under a notion of the rivers not being navigable, while the fact may be quite otherwise. In the back and hilly parts of this province are numerous situations which would do admirably well for vineyards, the soil and climate equally promising success, and the wild vines everywhere found in immense quantities. Nothing is supposed to be wanting but a navigation, which ought to be well enquired into.

Every reason of effect conspires to shew the propriety of settling the back parts of this province in preference to the maritime ones; in the latter rice must be the staple, which is not wanted, since it is the grand staple of South Carolina, where there are swamps sufficient to raise more than they will ever be able to sell. Indigo they may cultivate, but the crop will be far inferior to those on the rich, deep, black land in the back country; and as to tobacco, the soil on the coast is not comparable to that on the Ohio, where the planters will rival them entirely, not to speak of the want of ports. At the same time that these points give such a great

superiority, there is an equal one in the articles of health and pleasure. A temperate and healthy climate is, for profit as well as pleasure, of the greatest importance; the life of a negroe employed on indigo in the back parts of the province, would be worth ten years purchase more than one employed on rice in the maritime part: and the same difference must necessarily be found in the population of whites. The destructive swamps in which rice is cultivated must never be expected to breed people; whereas the high, dry, and healthy regions of the western parts are so liberally blessed with every circumstance of climate, soil, and productions, that the people would increase prodigiously, as in fact they are found to do in all the back settlements of the southern colonies.

In the next place let me recommend to the planters of North Carolina, whether living in the eastern or western part of the province, to pursue a better conduct relative to their cattle. Instead of keeping such vast herds of half-starved, stunted beasts, let them provide good pastures, and keep fewer beasts; the consequence of which will be, that five head will pay them better than twenty. In the very
back-

backward parts of the colony they have good meadows and pastures, but these are where the settlements are most scattered ; and in all the rest of the country all the pastures the cattle have are the woods : this ought on every account to be remedied, so as to draw a greater profit from the stocks, and at the same time make them contribute largely to manuring the plantations, which at present they are far enough from doing. This good effect is only to be brought about by providing them pastures, as I said ; in order to which the system of crops which I have so often condemned must be changed, and the land, when corn, &c. is no longer sown on it, must be left in sufficient order, and sown with grass seed, that good pastures may come in succession, instead of the land becoming forest again. There are sorts of grasses indigenous in the country, which might be brought into culture, that would answer this purpose ; but the readiest way to effect it would be to sow lucerne, which I before recommended to other colonies : the hotter the climate, the greater the necessity of employing this grass, or some one similar to it in the great length of the root, which penetrates so deeply in the ground

as to secure the plant from all damage by the heat of the sun beams; most grasses, from having fibrous roots, which spread near the surface, are in these climates burnt up, but lucerne will bear the hottest sun, and thrive in it. By means of the culture of this plant they would be able to provide well for their cattle, both horned cattle, sheep, and swine, to all whom it is equally grateful; a few acres cropped with it would go as far as a great number of woodland: the cattle would thrive, their size and breed be improved; and, instead of yielding little or no profit, they would become one of the best branches of the planter's business.

In England it has been found necessary to plant lucerne in rows, in order to keep it free from the natural grass, which otherwise soon choaks and destroys it; but in such climates as Carolina, the heat of the sun is such an enemy to the vegetation of grass, that none is to be found in the flat country but in rice swamps: this precaution therefore would be unnecessary, and it might be sown broad-cast with the last crop of corn, in the same manner as clover in England. This would (if properly introduced in the system) prove of wonderful
utility

utility to the cattle, and be of more consequence to the planter than almost any other improvement. But I am aware that a North Carolina man would be apt to sow lucerne with the last crop of such a system as this :

1. Tobacco.
2. Tobacco.
3. Tobacco.
4. Tobacco.
5. Indian corn.
6. Indian corn.
7. Wheat.
8. Pease.
9. Wheat.
10. Wheat.

In which case he must not expect it to prove the valuable plant I have mentioned : for such a system leaves the land a caput mortuum for some time, until the growth spontaneous to the country appears, which is wood of several kinds ; and it is not to be expected that a crop of any value should grow after such treatment. But lucerne being to planters, circumstanced as the North Carolina ones, of great value, it would well deserve better treatment. Suppose the system begins with fresh woodland ; it should be sown with the last crop of
of

of some such system as this, in which I have partly allowed the planters to be bad husbandmen, as they all will be, till the luxuriance of the fresh land is a little tamed.

1. Tobacco.
2. Tobacco.
3. Indigo.
4. Cotton.
5. Wheat.
6. Cotton.
7. Indian corn.
8. Potatoes.
9. Cotton.
10. Potatoes.
11. Oats, or Pease, and with it, Lu-

cerne. In case cotton is not planted, some crop should be taken instead of it, that is not a great exhauster of the land. There are other roots which thrive well in the climate, as turneps, carrots, and several sorts of cabbages. These should certainly be introduced in the field culture, to yield food for the cattle in winter, which is as necessary as lucerne for the summer; since hay is to be had only in rice swamps cleared, or in the natural meadows near the mountains.

It

It is only in the introduction of such plants in their systems of crops that they can be able to keep their lands in tolerable heart, or vary their present bad husbandry : no land, however good, will bear such exhausting crops for ever, as tobacco, indigo, and corn ; it must be exhausted, vary them how you will ; but by introducing potatoes (which is a native plant to the Carolinas) turneps, carrots, cabbages, or other plants, for the winter food of cattle, the land would be kept fertile twice as long, and be in good heart when laid down to lucerne.

The present general management of the cattle I should adhere to, that is, to let them wander about the woods all day, and and keep them at home in the night, with only this variation, they should in the pens and folds be *well* fed both winter and summer, which at present is far enough from being the case. In summer lucerne should be mown and given green in racks ; and in winter they should have roots or cabbages, or the hay of lucerne : and the hogs also well fed with roots or cabbages, and such offal as the plantation yields : the advantages of this conduct would be great, not only in the superior growth of the cattle, and

and the larger quantity of produce yielded by them, but also in that article essential to all husbandry, *dung*: thus managed they would make much more dung, and of a quality far superior to that which the planters gain at present; for every farmer knows the difference between the dung of cattle well fed and that of cattle half starved: this would be a new assistant to them in keeping their fields in good heart, and would vastly increase the profit of their plantations.

This conduct would soon make a great change in the appearance of the country, and in its value; now almost as much returns to forest as is broken up, by the strange management they have of roaming from piece to piece, and touching none without ruining and exhausting it. What a great difference would it make, if when they took in a fresh piece of land, the old one was kept in value under lucerne, or some grass that would suit the climate. We should then see extensive and wide-spreading pastures of excellent herbage, instead of those numerous spots, which, having been under culture, and exhausted, lie absolutely barren for some years,

years, and then are covered gradually with weeds, bushes, and rubbish, among which forest-trees at last shoot up. This great change would make cattle as profitable to them as their staples, instead of keeping monstrous herds, which yield little or no produce. The planters should remember that in proportion as the country settles, the woodlands diminish, and the number of their cattle must necessarily fall off; then they would find the advantage strongly of keeping the land under good grass which they had had in culture: without this precaution, they will by and by, instead of boasting of a thousand or fifteen hundred head of cattle, with difficulty be able to keep a fourth of the number; and they will then be forced to the very culture of grass and other food for cattle as a necessary; it will then be a difficult and expensive business to get good grass on land so ruined and exhausted as their old plantations will be found.

In carrying such ideas into execution, supposing it ever done, fences should be much more attended to than they are at present in North Carolina: it ought to be an universal rule, never departed from, to bring

bring into culture no piece of ground without previously fencing it in a secure and lasting manner by a live hedge, bank, and ditch. There is no part of the world in which this can be done better than in Carolina, from the quick growth of wood in land not exhausted by planting. And these fences should not only be kept up while the land yields a crop, but afterwards when it is under grass or lucerne, that the fences may be secure enough to keep all cattle out, in order for mowing the crop to feed with at night. When the lucerne began to fail from age, or the planter wanted the land again for corn, &c. then he would find the fences prove of great utility. It is observable that under grass or lucerne the land, if well laid down, and in heart, would continually improve in fertility until in some years it would prove highly profitable for a fresh system of crops.

There is no greater defect in the husbandry of this province than the foulness of the crops with weeds, &c. the improvement in this case would follow of course from adopting a different system of crops, as recommended above.

C H A P. XX.

S O U T H C A R O L I N A.

*Climate of South Carolina—Productions—
Soil.*

THE province of South Carolina lies between lat. 31° and 35° N. but no idea is to be formed of the climate from that parallel, which in all other countries is found to be the finest on the globe; whereas this province experiences degrees of heat and cold rarely felt in other countries. This will appear from the following authentic account, said to be written by governor Glen. “Our climate is various and uncertain, to such an extraordinary degree, that I fear not to affirm there are no people upon earth who I think can suffer greater extremes of heat and cold; it is happy for us they are not of long duration. No idea of either one or the other can be formed from our latitude, which on other continents is found to be very desirable; nor dare I to trace by any physical reasoning the causes of these extremes, lest
I should

I should amuse with vain conjectures those to whom I would not write any thing but truth ; I shall therefore content myself with setting down what we are sure of by experiments. In summer the thermometer hath been known to rise to 98 degrees, and in winter to fall to 10 degrees. The weather perhaps is no where more variable, with respect to heat and cold, than in Carolina ; the changes are frequent, sudden, and great ; but the decreases of heat are always greater and more sudden than its increases. On the 10th of January, 1745, at two o'clock in the afternoon, the thermometer was at 70 degrees, but the next morning it was at only 15 degrees, which was the greatest and most sudden change that I have seen.

In summer the heat of the shaded air at two or three o'clock in the afternoon is frequently between 90 and 95 degrees ; but such extremes of heat, being soon productive of thunder showers, are not of long duration. On the 14th, 15th, and 16th of June, 1738, at three o'clock in the afternoon, the thermometer was at 98 degrees, a heat equal to the greatest heat of the human body in health ! I then applied a thermometer to my arm-pits, and it sunk one degree ;

degree; but in my mouth and hands it continued at 98 degrees. Sixty-five degrees and a half may be called the temperate heat in Carolina, which exceeds 48 degrees, the temperate heat in England, more than that exceeds, 32 degrees, the freezing point. The mean heat of the shaded air, taken from the mean nocturnal heat, and from the mean heat at two or three o'clock in the afternoon, during the four seasons of the year, is as followeth: in spring 61 degrees, in summer 78, in autumn 71, and in winter 52. The mean heat of the shaded air, at two or three o'clock in the afternoon, is 65 degrees in the spring, 82 in the summer, 75 in autumn, and 55 in winter. The mean nocturnal heat in those seasons is 57 degrees in the spring, 74 in the summer, 68 in autumn, and 49 in winter. Therefore our winter's mean nocturnal heat exceeds the temperate heat in England.

“As the weather here is generally very serene, the sun's rays exert more constantly their full force; and therefore when we are abroad, and exposed to the sun, we are acted upon by a much greater degree of heat than that of the shaded air; for the thermometer, when suspended five feet

from the ground, and exposed to the sun and to reflected rays from our sandy streets, hath frequently risen in a few minutes from 15 to 26 degrees above what were at those times the degrees of heat in the shaded air. But I have never yet made that experiment when the heat of the shaded air was above 88 degrees; when therefore we are in the streets in a serene day in the summer, the air we walk in and inspire is many degrees hotter than human blood; for supposing the heat of the shaded air be 88 degrees when the thermometer would rise 26 degrees higher if suspended and exposed to the sun, &c. as before mentioned; or suppose that the heat of the shaded air be 98 degrees when the thermometer would rise 26 degrees higher by such suspension and exposure: in the first of those two cases, the heat of the air in the streets would exceed 98, the natural heat of the human blood, by 16 degrees; and in the last case it would exceed such heat by 26 degrees.

“ The first instance of intense cold that I shall mention, relates to a healthy young person of my family, who at the time was two or three and twenty years of age, and usually slept in a room without a fire: that person

person carried two quart bottles of hot water to bed, which was of down, and covered with English blankets; the bottles were between the sheets, but in the morning they were both split to pieces, and the water solid lumps of ice. In the kitchen, where there was a fire, the water in a jar, in which was a large live eel, was frozen to the bottom; and I found several small birds frozen to death near my house; they could not have died for want of food, the frost having been but of one day's continuance. But an effect much to be regretted is, that it destroyed almost all the orange trees in the country; I lost above three hundred bearing trees; and an olive tree of such a prodigious size, that I thought it proof against all weathers; it was near a foot and a half diameter in the trunk, and bore many bushels of excellent olives every year. This frost happened on the 7th of February, 1747."

Another account, written also by a person who resided long in Carolina, gives some other particulars deserving notice. "The air is more clear and pure here than in Britain, being seldom darkened with fogs; the dews hower are great, especially in the end of the summer, and be-

ginning of the fall. The rains are heavy, but commonly short, and observe no particular season or time of the year.

“ The winds are generally changeable and erratic, blowing from different points of the compass without any regularity; about the vernal and autumnal equinoxes they are commonly very boisterous; at other seasons are moderate.—The northerly winds are cold, dry, and healthy—they disperse fogs and mists, giving a clear sky—the north-west is the coldest we have; it comes to us over an immense tract of land, and from the snow-capped Apalachian mountains; whenever it blows the air is cool, and in the winter it generally brings us frost, and often snow: it is vulgarly and deservedly called the great physician of the country, as by its force it clears the air of the putrid autumnal effluvia; and by its coldness shuts up the pores of the earth, and of the trees, keeping in their vapours, the principal sources of the epidemics of the warm season. This refreshing, invigorating, and bracing wind is anxiously expected about the month of October by all, but by those particularly who have the misfortune to be afflicted with the more obstinate intermittents, to whom it generally

rally affords relief: the easterly winds are always cool; from them we have our most refreshing summer showers; when they blow for any continuance they occasion coughs and catarrhal fevers. The south and south-west winds are warmest and most unhealthy; in whatever season they blow the air is foggy, and affects the breathing: in summer they are sultry and suffocating; an excessive dejection of spirits and debility of body are then an universal complaint; if this constitution lasts any considerable time, hysterics, hypo, intermitting and remitting, putrid, slow, or nervous fevers are produced. This province is subject to frequent and dreadful tempests of thunder and lightning in May, June, July, and August."

From this account of the weather in South Carolina is to be drawn several important conclusions; that the maritime part of the country is in one of the most unhealthy climates in the world cannot be doubted. The heat rises to an extreme which is felt in very few, if any places on the globe, of which accounts have been given: at the same time the changes to intense cold are so violent and sudden, that instances are to be met with no where but

in America, and not in that quarter to such a degree as in South Carolina. Now of all other circumstances of weather, there are none that are found so insalubrious to the human constitution as such sudden changes, nor any which demands so much caution in dress and living. Another point to be observed is, this immoderate and excessive heat of climate is in a country, the major part of which is spread with stagnated waters of no depth, for such are the marshes, swamps, and all the rice grounds; from the mud of these stinking sinks and sewers the heat exhales such putrid effluvia, as must necessarily poison the air, and render it more similar to the Campania of Rome than any thing else an European can compare it to.

But at the same time that this character is perfectly just to the marshy sea coast, and generally to all the flat country, we must observe that it holds no further: this flat country reaches from eighty to a hundred miles from the sea coast, but then the soil begins to rise into little hills and beautiful inequalities, which continue increasing in height and variation till you reach the Apalachian mountains, at three hundred and three hundred and fifty miles

miles from the sea. In all this range of country the climate is nearly the reverse; they have neither those extremes of heat, nor the excess of cold that is felt on the coast. On the contrary, they have a charming, pleasant, and temperate climate, which in health and agreeableness yields to none in the world. This is to be attributed to the difference in the surface of the two countries; in one it is high, dry, and hilly; and wherever a country is of that sort, or rocky, let it be in whatever latitude it may, it is sure to be healthy; but the other is a flat, marshy tract, full everywhere of stagnant water; and this is throughout the world a never failing sign of an unhealthy air.

Hence therefore a distinction is to be made in every article that depends on climate between the eastern and western parts of this province: an inhabitant of Carolina may assert that country to be one of the most healthy and pleasant in the world, and nothing can be more true: an inhabitant of Carolina may assert that country to be in unhealthiness the sink of the earth; nothing more true: but let them explain; one will be found to live in the east of it, the other in the west; countries as different

almost as Iceland and Bengal. If it is asked, how it comes that any people will live in the flat country when the back parts are so superior; it must be attributed to two causes, the one is the contiguity to the ports and trade; the other, the necessity of swamps for cultivating their grand staple, rice; were it not for these it is to be supposed that all the inhabitants would flock backwards.

Relative to the products of South Carolina, it will be necessary to know them with tolerable precision, as they will mark the nature of the country better than any other circumstance. I shall begin with timber: the uncultivated parts of the province are one continued forest, with not much underwood. Among the trees are found oaks of several sorts, viz. the *chestnut oak*, which is the largest in the province; some are three or four feet in diameter, and sixty feet high to the first bough: they grow chiefly in low land that is stiff and rich. *Scarlet oak*, used, as well as the former, in ship-building; it grows on dry land. *Red oak* grows sometimes very large and lofty, but is porous, and not durable; used for rails, staves, &c. *Spanish oak*, more durable, is used sometimes in

in ship-building, and rives well into clapboards. *Bastard Spanish oak*, used for rails and clapboards. *Black oak* is durable under water, used also for building. *White iron oak*, very durable, is reckoned the best of all for ship-building; grows on dry lean land. *Live oak*, the most durable of all, but unfortunately affords not long plank clear of boughs. The weight and firmness of this wood is extraordinary; the particles have such an adhesion, that when a nail is once driven in, it is almost impossible to draw it out again, it grows in fresh water ponds and swamps. *Willow oak*, so called from the near resemblance of the leaf to that of a willow: these are not all the sorts of oak found in this province, there are several other varieties, but these are the principal distinctions: I must remark that all of them yield acorns, generally in plenty, and some of them in immense quantities, that scarcely ever fail; and several of them that are as good for swine as chesnuts, having a strong resemblance of that fruit; and they are in general much better food for hogs than our English acorns; and such as will not only keep hogs, but fat them admirably, without any expence to the planter. This is a
great

great object to the Carolina people; for there is not a farmer or planter in the country who has not great stocks of hogs kept in the woods, and even fattened there.

Ash is a common tree here, but differing somewhat from that of England. Elm they have of two sorts; one grows on the high lands, which resembles that of Britain; the other sort grows in low lands. Tulip trees grow to an immense size; some of them have been found one and twenty feet in circumference, and some even ten feet in diameter; they have also a story current in Carolina, that a new settler, not having a better habitation, took his abode for some time in a decayed tulip-tree, in which he had his bed and other furniture; yet this man, poor as he may seem from hence, lived to become a considerable and wealthy planter. The use the wood of this tree is put to, is generally that of shingles, wainscot, planks for buildings, and lasts longer under ground.

Beech is often met with, and grows to a large size; it is very like that of Europe; the only use it is applied to in Carolina is for firing; it yields plenty of mast for swine. Hornbeam is common here. Sassafras is one of the articles of their exportation;

tion ; it comes sometimes to a large size, even to two feet diameter ; they use it for turners ware, house-building, posts, and does well for all ground work. Dogwood is very plentiful, and generally found on light lands that are rich ; they use it in building, where it is not exposed to the air. Laurel comes here to a great size ; so that planks are sawn out of it, but it is not durable when exposed to the air : both bay and laurel grow principally in low swampy ground. The red cedar grows chiefly on swamps or sand banks ; it is much valued for durability, and used for building sloops, boats, &c. as well as by the joiners ; nor will the worm touch it for many years, and the sloops built of it are esteemed for good failers. White cedar is no less esteemed for other uses, particularly top masts, yards, booms, bowsprits, &c. and the best shingles are made of it.

The cyprus grows to an immense size, perhaps larger than any other tree in Carolina, both in respect of height and thickness ; some have been found of thirty-six feet in circumference. The Indians make their canoes of single cyprus-trees scooped out, and some of them have been thus made large enough to carry thirty barrels ; and others

others that are split down the bottom, and a piece added thereto, will carry eighty or an hundred.

The locust-tree is very durable, and will bear being exposed to the weather; it is never found in swamps or low places, being a general sign of dry, healthy, good land. They have four sorts of pines here; the pitch pine grows to a great size: I before mentioned this tree yielding tar, pitch, &c. The white pine they saw in various species of lumber; it makes also masts, yards, &c. the almond pine does also for masts. The dwarf pine is of no great account. The hiccory is a kind of walnut, the timber not all durable. The common walnut is called the *black* walnut, to distinguish it from the hiccory: it affects good land, and grows therein to a vast size: it is hard and durable. The maple is common here. The chinkapin is a sort of chestnut, and durable in the weather; it is used in building boats, shallops, &c. Birch grows on the banks of the rivers, high up the country, but seldom found on the coast. Willows, sycamores, and hollies, are found here. Three sorts of mulberry-trees abound in Carolina, wherever the land

land is light ; and rich shumac and hazel wood are also common.

In the next place we are to attend to the fruit-trees of this country, which are very numerous.

Among these we find the wild fig, which grows only on the mountains or their neighbourhood. The wild plums are of several sorts ; they are of quick growth, bearing in five years from the stone. They have a kind of currants, the bushes of which grow seven or eight feet high. Apples of various sorts, and in great plenty. Three or four sorts of pears. Three sorts of quinces, the fruit of which is very large, and much beyond those of England. The least slip of this tree planted will bear in three years ; a surprising vegetation. Peaches are the most common fruit in the country, and no wonder, for every stone that falls becomes a bearing tree in three years ; all are standards ; the quantity of this fruit is so great, that the hogs have much the larger share of it : they are generally such great bearers, that the branches of the trees are broken down with the weight of the fruit ; they grow to the size of common apple-trees.

The

The apricot grows to a very great size, exceeding most apple-trees : they are raised from the stone. Red and black cherries are found very plentifully. Gooseberries do not agree well with the climate, but common currants do well. Raspberries are plentiful. Strawberries thrive greatly, and bear amply. Native vines are met with all over the province ; but the finest are in the back parts upon the dry hills, where they are five times as large as on the coast. From the native black grape, which does not ripen till October, wine has been made, of an excellent quality, and very strong ; but the vineyards which have been tried of European grapes, have all failed from their ripening in August.

Besides these fruits, South Carolina produces others more valuable and sought after, as oranges, sweet and sour, lemons, citrons, limes, olives, pomegranates, all sorts of melons, water-melons, &c. Oranges and lemons are an article of exportation, great numbers being sent abroad annually. Olives are not cultivated in common, which is a neglect ; though none of these fruits can be depended on, as in a country where no frosts are felt ; whereas in Carolina, as before

fore remarked, they are sometimes so severe, as to kill all tender trees to the root.

In the kitchen garden are found every sort of useful plant that is commonly cultivated in the gardens in England. Potatoes no where thrive better, and they have them of several sorts; many sorts of peas and beans, with cabbages, broccoli, cauliflowers, &c. Some of these are in a perfection which is unknown to us in Britain, owing to the superior heat of the climate; yet in general we should remark, that garden-stuff, which will grow at all in the climate (fruits excepted) is preferable more to the north, in Maryland, Virginia, and the southern part of Pennsylvania; but in the back parts of Carolina, near the mountains, all these articles are yielded in a perfection that cannot be exceeded.

The products which respect husbandry in particular are Indian corn, which thrives very well here; wheat, which does well in the backward parts, but very badly in the maritime side of the province; barley the same; both these grain, as well as oats, are very little cultivated, nor can they be till the settlements reach further back; beans and peas of several sorts, particularly
the

the Indian kinds, thrive well all over the province. As to the staples of rice, indigo, &c. I shall speak more particularly of them in another place.

The soil of Carolina must, like the climate, be divided before one can speak of it with any precision, into the eastern and western parts of the province; that is, the maritime part, and the back country; the former reaches above an hundred miles from the coast: this tract contains several kinds of land, which the planters distinguish by calling them pine land, oak land, swamps, and marshes.

Pine land is much the most general, containing perhaps four-fifths of the country; the soil is a dry white sand, covered with pines: if there is any underwood it is very poor, only the whortleberry and chinkapin, which Dr. Mitchel calls the *beath* of America. This land is very poor, and will bear scarcely any thing but its spontaneous growth; in spots it contains a little grass, but of so bad and sour a nature, that cattle will not touch it unless half starved. The writer I just now mentioned has an observation on this pine land, which deserves attention. “These pines with which all our southern colonies are covered for one hun-

hundred or one hundred and fifty miles from the sea-coast, and in some all over them, are the most pernicious of all weeds; they not only destroy every thing upon the face of the earth, but the very land they grow upon; insomuch that nothing will grow among them, and hardly any thing after them. It is a general observation, that the lands are not only barren on which they grow naturally, but if they happen to come up on other lands, they spoil them, and render them more or less barren. Having often examined what this could be owing to, I could not attribute it altogether to their large spreading roots, which spread all over the surface of the earth like a mat, and exhaust its substance, but chiefly to the strong acid juice of their leaves, which distills from them in the spring of the year like oil of turpentine, and poisons both the earth and every thing upon it; as it is well known that all acids are a poison to vegetables, and all alcalies a rich manure. But whatever may be the cause, the matter of fact is certain, that nothing will grow among pines in America; and M. du Hamel makes the same observation in France. The whole surface of the earth is covered with their acid leaves; they over-

top and destroy every thing ; and if a little grass should happen to come up among them where they grow thin, it is so scarce, yellow, and sour, that to see any beast feed upon it, is a certain sign of the miserable poverty of a country, where they are reduced to the last extremity. Yet these are the only pastures they have in many of our colonies : what is worse, these pernicious weeds are not to be extirpated ; they have a wing to their seed, which disperses it every where with the winds, like thistles, and in two or three years forms a *pine thicket*, which nothing can pass through or live in. Thus the land becomes a perfect desert instead of a profitable pasture, in a few years after it is cleared. Corn upon such land looks as yellow as the turpentine with which it is fed, and grass will not grow." There is a great deal of truth and good sense in this passage ; but at the same time it is not strictly true, that nothing will grow *after* these pines, for it is well known that the planters get Indian corn and peas from these lands after they are cleared ; and when they lie low enough to be flooded, rice. But the principal use they are put to is for indigo, in which they answer tolerably ; but this is only because they have no better

ter that is dry ; for indigo delights in dry, rich, deep, black mould. When you abuse their pine barrens, a Carolina planter will answer you by saying, that they do for their richest crop, indigo ; which is very true, as I just observed ; but they do for it only as poor sands in England do for the culture of wheat : the farmers sow it because they have no better, and get half crops, which is just the case with indigo on pine barrens.

Oak land is another sort ; it is a black, rich sand, and produces oaks, walnut, hickory, and black mulberry-trees, and is to all intents excellent land ; but the misfortune is, that the quantity of it is very small ; it is found only in narrow stripes between the swamps and pine barrens, and between the latter and creeks or rivers. This is the only land they have that will produce good crops of corn and indigo.

Swamps are of several sorts, and they judge of them by their produce ; the best are the white oak swamps, which have generally a clayey foundation ; but these are rare in South Carolina, or else being on the large rivers are too deep to clear and drain. Others bear canes, and are therefore called cane swamps : these are generally rich and good ; but the most general are cyprus

ones, which is the spontaneous growth of all, where the soil surrounding them is a poor land. However, it is to be noted, that all these swamps, when drained, produce the grand staple of the country, rice, yielding crops of it, as in other cases of a goodness proportioned to their fertility. The face of the country in general is that either of a swamp or a pine barren. Marshes they divide into the salt and fresh water marshes; when the water is low enough they pasture them with horses and cattle; and if they bestow the labour of draining on them they make tolerable good meadows.

There can be no doubt but that all this maritime part of America has been covered with the sea, it has every sign of it; upon digging you find no clay, stones, rocks, nor minerals, it is all sand, or beds of shells; and the flatness of the country, with the gradual shallowness of the sea, shew it sufficiently.

The varieties of land just given include all the maritime part of the province; but the back country, which reaches to the Apalachian mountains, is very different; swamps and marshes are there unknown, or at least but rarely met with, from whence

whence proceeds the healthiness of it. The face of the country is hilly, and either covered with tall stately trees, or spread into extensive meadows of dry, rich, deep land ; which is the general nature of the soil, except where rocks abound, which is on the broken parts of some of the mountains, and on the banks of some of the rivers. Pines are in this part of the province seldom met with ; on the contrary, the timber is oak, elm, hiccory, walnut, and mulberry : no lands in the southern part of North America have an appearance of being more fertile ; and the most retired of our plantations, which are seated only where this fine country begins, find that one acre will yield as much produce of any kind as three in the maritime part of the province. The fresh wood lands here are deep, and *black* for two feet deep ; such is the right land for indigo, tobacco, corn of all sorts, and, in a word, for every thing that is sown upon it. This extraordinary fertility of the soil is united with a climate as mild, temperate, healthy, and agreeable, as that of the eastern part of Carolina is the reverse. It is the rice swamps that alone keep the inhabitants near the coast ; the planters are accustomed to that culture,

and will not change it for a different one: no rice is to be cultivated here, which is the circumstance that is the glory of the country: from this country it is that silk and wine must come, if ever they are had from Carolina.

It is the peculiar blessing of these back tracts of country, that they have every product that is valuable, which is known in the maritime part of the province, except rice; and at the same time they are exempted from those of little or no use, or that are pernicious, such as the pine; a character we may fairly give it (notwithstanding its yielding tar, pitch, &c.) whenever it grows on land that could be applied to any other use.

This is the part of Carolina to which all new settlers should be recommended; here they will increase their numbers greatly from the healthiness of the country, which is not the case with the swamps and marshes on the coast. They may raise much better and more valuable staples than rice.

C H A P. XXI.

*Staple productions—Rice—Culture of it—
Management of the plantations—Profit—
Indigo—Culture—Profit—Observations
—Other staples—Remarks.*

RICE is yet the grand staple production of South Carolina, and that for which the planters neglect the healthy, pleasant back country in order to live in the *Dismals* on the coast, for so the Americans justly call the swamps: rice can only be cultivated in land which lies so low as to admit of floating at pleasure, and all such lands in Carolina are necessarily swamps. The first business is to drain the swamp, in which work they have no particular methods deserving notice, or which are unknown in England. The moment they have got the water off they attack the trees, which in some swamps are very numerous; these they cut down at the root, leaving the stumps in the earth, and, oftentimes even the trunks and branches of the trees are left about the ground: some planters pile them up in heaps, and leave them to

rot ; others, more provident, cut them into lengths, and convert them into some sort of lumber. However they do not wait for the ground being cleared of them, but proceed to plant their rice among the stumps. In March, April, and May they plant ; the negroes draw furrows eighteen inches asunder, and about three inches deep, in which the seeds are sown ; a peck is sufficient for an acre of land : as soon as planted they let in the water to a certain depth, which is, during the season of its growth, repeated, and drawn off several times ; but most of the growth is while the water is eight, nine, or ten inches deep on the land. The great object of the culture is to keep the land clean from weeds, which is absolutely necessary, and the worst weed is grass : if they would say a man is a bad manager, they do not observe such a person's plantation is not clean, or is weedy, but *such a man is in the grass* ; intimating that he has not negroes enough to keep his rice free from grass. This is the only object till it is reaped, which is usually about the latter end of August or beginning of September. Like wheat in England, they prefer cutting it while the straw is a little green, leaving it on the stubble to dry and wither two or three

three days in case the weather is favourable: after which they lay it up in barns or stacks, in the same manner as corn in Europe.

The next operation, as in other sorts of corn, is the threshing of it, after which it is winnowed, which was formerly a very tedious operation, but now much accelerated by the use of a wind-fan. When winnowed it is ground, to free the rice from the husk; this is done in wooden mills of about two feet diameter: it is then winnowed again, and put into a mortar large enough to hold half a bushel, in which it is beat with a pestle by negroes, to free it from its thick skin; this is a very laborious work. In order to free it from the flour and dust made by this pounding, it is sifted; and again through another sieve, called a market sieve, which separates the broken and small rice, after which it is put up in barrels, and is ready for market.

The reader must observe upon this account that the cultivation of it is dreadful: for if a work could be imagined peculiarly unwholesome, and even fatal to health, it must be that of standing, like the negress, ankle, and even mid-leg deep in water, which floats an ouzy mud; and exposed all the while to a burning sun, which makes
the

the very air they breathe hotter than the human blood ; these poor wretches are then in a furnace of stinking putrid effluvia : a more horrible employment can hardly be imagined, not far short of digging in Potosi. We are told indeed that South Carolina breeds more negroes than she destroys, which is certainly a fact, as appears by the annual exportation of a few ; but then let it not be imagined that it is in these properly denominated *dismals* : we are to remember that the proportion between the domestic and other negroes and planting ones, is as 30,000 to 40,000, when the total is 70,000 ; and we are further to remember, that many are employed on indigo where there are no rice swamps, and also in other branches of culture ; all these with the 30,000, may certainly increase greatly ; but it does not from hence follow that those employed on rice do not decrease considerably, which is a certain fact, and it would be miraculous were it otherwise. It will therefore be no impropriety to determine that there must be a considerable expence in recruiting those negroes that are employed on rice, and more considerable far than what attends others employed

ed on tobacco, indigo, or indeed any plant not cultivated in a swamp.

As to the product of rice, it varies much, which is in proportion to the goodness of the swamp, and to the culture that is bestowed on it; the land it likes is the stiff, deep, miry mud on clay; the worst is the swamp with only a sandy bottom. Governor Glen observes that thirty slaves are a proper number for a plantation, and to be attended by one overseer. The common computation throughout the province is, communibus annis, that each working hand employed in a rice plantation, makes four barrels and a half of rice, each barrel weighing four or five hundred pounds weight neat; besides a sufficient quantity of provisions of all kinds for the slaves, horses, cattle, and poultry of the plantation for the year ensuing; the price 6s. 5d. per 100lb. or from 1l. 5s. to 1l. 12s. per barrel; but since this gentleman wrote, the price has risen to 2l. and 4l. per barrel. We are told in an account written in 1710, that the product was from 30 to 60 bushels; suppose 40, and that a bushel weighed 65lb. at 450lb. a barrel this would be $5\frac{3}{4}$ to the acre; and at 2l. the amount would be 10l. 15s.

The

The first account of $4\frac{1}{2}$ barrels at 2l. is 9l. per working hand, at the price rice is at present. A late account of Carolina, published in 1770, makes the labour of the slaves 10l. each; these agree therefore very well. But Dr. Stork makes the profit per head 20l. by this culture, and says that where the soil and climate are proper for rice, there is no grain in the world yields so much profit to the planter; this is evidently a mistake, and a great one. If we allow 10l. a head upon the former, and better authority, we cannot be far from the truth. I before calculated the annual expence of negroes as follows:

			l.	s.	d.
Overseer	-	-	1	0	0
Cloaths	-	-	0	10	0
Sundries	-	-	1	10	0
			3	0	0

But the decline of value must be in all reason reckoned in rice work; if 2l. the expences will be 7l. and the produce but 10l. so the planter's profit per head will be only 3l. from which must be farther deducted the interest of his cost, or 50l. which at 5 per cent. (not reckoning the rate per cent. of

of the colonies) come to 2l. 10s. and leaves neat from the slave 9l. 10s. But as this would by no means pay the planter for his other expences and his time, he makes a shift to save something in the articles of overseer and cloathing; but still the product from rice alone would be insufficient: the method in which they make it up is partly by lumber, as the slave will have time in the winter to thresh and dress more rice than he can plant in the summer; and consequently can spare it for sawing lumber. But yet rice would not answer were it not for other assistance; this is chiefly indigo. I before remarked that between the pine barrens and swamps are dry slips of oak land, which is rich and good; on this they plant indigo, and to good profit, with this further advantage, that indigo requiring no winter work, the slaves may assist in manufacturing rice, and sawing lumber, &c. Upon this plan indigo is extremely profitable, but for want of enough of it, they plant it likewise on the pine barren, where it is but little better than rice. It is this secondary object of the rice planters which makes their business advantageous enough to support them; but upon this

this circumstance I must make a few observations.

What can induce them to have any thing to do with an article of culture, which, taken singly, would not even pay charges? That this is the fact is not to be disputed, for we have the produce per working hand from the best authority, the governor of the province, who resided in it many years; and let any person judge if a negroe can stand in less than 7l. or 8l. a year in so pernicious an employment as that of making rice. And it is also clear enough that the wear of tools, buildings, charges, incidents, interest of other money, &c. &c. must likewise come to something considerable.

What therefore I say can induce the planters to engage in such a business?

Possibly it is owing to habit, and being accustomed to consider rice as their grand dependance, which it was to their fathers before indigo, silk, cotton, &c. were known here; and having been used to this idea, they find it difficult, like all cultivators of the soil, to change old customs. If it is not owing to this, it is difficult to say to what it can be owing. In the back country of the province the land is of infinitely greater

greater fertility, and would produce much more valuable staples, at the same time that the healthiness of the climate would both to the planter and his family, as well as his slaves, be invaluable: their being so much addicted therefore to rice, is founded on no good and substantial reasons.

There is another circumstance which should make the government attentive to encouraging every staple, but particularly indigo, tobacco, silk, wine, &c. more than rice, which is its being a rival to one of the most valuable articles of our trade, that of corn; for all the rice sold to Spain and Portugal is but enabling them to do without so much of our wheat; and that is partly the case with Germany: not that I would insinuate that restrictions on rice should be laid, for obvious reasons, and particularly, the not knowing whether we can supply those markets with corn, supposing they would take it of us—and also the value of the rice being all laid out in British commodities. But indigo, tobacco, &c. have all the same advantages without *any* disadvantages, nor even the appearance of any.

I N D I-

I N D I G O.

There are three sorts of indigo cultivated in South Carolina—the *Hispaniola*, the *Bahama*, which is a false Guatemala, and the *native*; the two first are the most valuable, but the last is much better adapted to the climate. The former is an annual plant, but the wild sort, which is common in the country, is perennial; its stalk dies every year, but it shoots up again next spring; the indigo made from it is of as good a quality as the other, the superiority of that being owing to the superior fertility of the West Indies, and a better climate for it. Dr. Mitchel reckons Carolina to have a great inferiority to the West Indies in this article: his words are, “Indigo thrives very indifferently either in the soil or the climate. Indigo is one of those rank weeds like tobacco, which not only exhaust the substance of the earth, but require the very best and richest lands, and such as have a natural moisture in them; whereas the lands in Carolina are extremely poor and sandy, and have a barren dryness in them, which renders them very unfit to produce such a crop as this to any manner of advantage. This
is

is planted by the French on the fresh woodlands of St. Domingo, which are too rich and moist even for sugar, and is intended to exhaust their luxuriant fertility, as we do with tobacco, in order to render them fit for that and other crops. They likewise cut it every six weeks, or eight times a year, and for two years together; whereas in Carolina it is cut but thrice; and as the land has not substance and moisture to make it shoot after cutting, and the summers are too short, the third cutting is but of little value, as even the second is in Virginia. Neither does the soil or climate seem to be fit to yield that rich juice which makes this dye in any plenty or perfection. The French and Spaniards make great quantities worth eight and ten shillings a pound, when the little we make in Carolina is not upon an average worth above two shillings, and a great deal has been sold for a shilling and less."

The proper soil for indigo is a rich, light, black mould, such as is commonly found in the back country; but in the maritime part they chuse oak land for it, not having the other; and as this is but in small quantity, they are forced to cultivate their poor

white sands for indigo, which will not yield near the produce which all cultivators of this commodity ought to be desirous of, and indeed which will always be gained when proper land is employed for it. The deficiency of common products appears from governor Glen's account, who asserts, that 30 lb. an acre is all that is to be expected in common, though good land will produce 80.

Respecting this point of produce, our accounts differ greatly, and none yet in print are fully to be depended on; Mr. Glen's account is, that one acre of *good land* will produce 80 lb. and one slave may manage two acres and upwards, and raise provisions besides, and have all the winter months to saw lumber, and be otherwise employed: 80 lb. at 3 s. the present price, is 12 l. per acre; and $2\frac{1}{2}$ acres at that rate amount to 30 l. per slave, besides lumber, which is very considerable: but I should observe, that there is much indigo brought now from Carolina, which sells in London for from 5 s. to 8 s. a pound, and some even higher, though the chief part of the crop may not yield more than 3 s. or 4 s. this will alter the average price;

price ; but how much, is almost impossible to ascertain, as it depends on many unknown circumstances.

Before I quit this subject, I shall, in order to give the reader all the satisfaction possible, transcribe part of an account of the indigo culture, written in 1755, before the province had got so largely into the management of it as it has done since.

“ Whoever plants indigo must be careful to have a good command of water in his reservoirs, which if in the center of his field, the better, to save time in bringing the plant when cut to the vats. We plant two kinds of land in Carolina, viz. high land and low land. The first is of the richest kind, overgrown with oak or hickory, in which the plant will strike its roots very strait and deep. The second is either our river or inland swamps, where we plant rice, which lands are generally covered with huge oaks and cypresses ; so that to gain a field of twenty acres in this country, as many noble trees must be felled and burnt, as in England would bring many thousands sterling.

“ This low land is banked, ditched, trenched, and drained ; but the soil must lie on a clay bottom, otherwise indigo will not thrive in it. In those lands the indigo roots spread horizontally, as in the high lands perpendicularly.”—This idea of our author seems contradictory to the best accounts I have received, which confine the culture of indigo to hiccory land and pine barren, as it requires a dry soil, though as fertile as possible, and consequently a swamp must be well *drained* indeed to be rendered proper for it : but what he says himself shews that the high land is the best for it, since all plants that strike a perpendicular root ought to be planted in a soil that will admit such roots shooting : a perpendicular root spreading horizontally, proves clearly that the soil is improper ; it meets with the wet retained by the clay, which prevents its running deeper. His situation, within forty miles of Charles Town, prevented him, I suppose, from mentioning the deep black loams of the back country, which are the only ones that will yield *great* crops of indigo. But to return,

“ If

“ If the planter prefer the quality before the quantity of his indigo, he will be very careful to let his plants but just blossom before he cuts ; for the more young and tender the plant, the more beautiful will be the colour of the indigo, though it will not yield perhaps so much as if cut a week or two later ; but what he loses one way he will gain another. On the contrary, if he lets his plants be overgrown, and stand too long, he never can expect bright indigo. Indigo has a very disagreeable smell, while making and curing ; and the *fæces*, when taken out of the steeper, if not immediately buried in the ground (for which it is excellent manure) breeds incredible swarms of flies.

“ The quality of indigo, when made, may be known by its brightness, closeness, and fine violet blue, inclining to copper. It is better by being kept some time, and ought to be light enough to swim on the water ; the quicker and more it sinks, the worse its property. The very best and finest is of a fine lively blue, inclining to the violet ; brilliant, of a fine shining colour when broke, and more beautiful within than without. A bushel of good indigo

D d 3 weighs

weighs about 50 or 55 pounds. The methods for trial of its goodness, is first to throw a cake into a glass of water, where it will soon dissolve entirely, if pure and well made; but if mixed with any foreign matter, the heterogeneous parts will sink. Secondly, another method is to burn it: good indigo entirely consumes away; but if adulterated, it will be discovered by the false mixtures remaining after the true indigo is consumed.

“ Our indigo making ceases with the summer. As soon as cold weather sets in, little or no fermentation can be excited. Double beating and labour is required; and in drying the indigo the cakes will break into powder. The first frosty night concludes our season.

Expence

Expence of purchasing a plantation in Carolina within 40 miles of Charles Town.

	l.	s.	d.
To 1000 acres of land (one third of which ought to be good swamp, the rest oak and hiccory, with some pine barren, at 11s. 5d. - - - - -	575	0	0
To a dwelling house, barn, stable, overseer's house, negro-huts, &c. - - - - -	142	15	0
To two valuable negroes, (a cooper and a carpenter) at 71l. 7s. 6d. - - - - -	142	15	0
To 26 other negroes, (two thirds men and one third women) at 35l. 10s. - - - - -	927	10	0
To two ordinary old negroes to look after the poultry, kine, hogs, &c. - - - - -	57	0	0
To a waiting boy, - - - - -	28	10	0
To a house-wench, - - - - -	40	15	0
To 20 head of oxen, cows, &c. at 1l. 8s. - - - - -	28	0	0
To 2 stallions and 4 breeding mares, at 5l. 14s. - - - - -	11	8	0
To hogs, sheep, and poultry, - - - - -	21	8	0
To plantation tools, a cart, plough, &c. - - - - -	21	8	0
To 2 riding horses for yourself, family, overseer, bridles, saddles, &c. - - - - -	28	0	0
To cloaths, provisions, &c. for negroes, feed, vats, &c. for the first year, - - - - -	35	15	0
To contingencies, nails, oil, &c. - - - - -	15	15	0
	£.	2075	19 0

The plantation per ann. after the first year.
N. B. This calculation is for good years, and exclusive of accidents.

To the overseer's wages, and allowance for rum, &c. - - - - -	35	15	0
To 32 pair of shoes for negroes, at 2s. 6d. - - - - -	3	0	0
To 160 yards of white plains (5 yards each negro) at 1s. 5d. - - - - -	11	6	8
Carried over	£.	50	1 8
D d 4			

408 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward	50	1	8
To thread, buttons, &c.	0	14	3
To one third of 32 blankets given every } third year,	3	17	0
To phyfic for each negro, as per agreement } with the doctor,	4	14	6
To Osnabrug, lime, oil, nails, and iron ware,	8	13	6
To freight and cooperage of 50 barrels of } rice, at 2s. 10d.	7	1	8
To ditto of 6 of indigo, at 3s. 2d.	0	19	0
To tax and quit-rent of 1000 acres of land,	2	2	6
To tax of 32 slaves, about	4	4	0
To purchase of two slaves annually, to keep } up the original stock, which it is judged } this and their increase may do,	71	5	0
To wear and tear,	14	10	0
	<u>£. 168</u>	<u>3</u>	<u>1</u>

By the produce of 60 acres of indigo at } 50 lb. per acre, at 2s. 10d. per lb. or } 7l. 1s. 8d. per acre,	425	0	0
By 50 barrels of rice, on 25 acres, each bar- } rel 500 lb. net, at 6s. per cwt.	66	18	0
By 50 barrels,	3	13	6
	<u>495</u>	<u>11</u>	<u>6</u>
Total,	495	11	6
Expences,	168	3	1
	<u>327</u>	<u>8</u>	<u>5</u>
Balance, planter's profit,	327	8	5

N. B. It is here supposed, that the family resides on the spot, and that the surplus of hogs, poultry, &c. raised above their own consumption, will be sufficient to find the family in butchers meat; and other necessaries, save cloathing.

“ This

“ This computation is made of two acres of indigo and one of rice to each hand ; they raise their own provisions besides.

“ If rice is not planted, some of the hands may be employed in the winter season in making naval stores, cutting of lumber, shingles, &c.” *

There are some valuable particulars in this account ; but in others it is either erroneous, or does not hold good at present, when they reckon that the slaves, well appointed and taken proper care of, keep up their own numbers with any new purchase, which indeed appears from Carolina generally exporting a few. As to the rice, if 66l. in 500l. with a loss of lumber, is all the recompence for fixing in the low swampy country, it shews at once how just my former observations were, that the back country is not only in point of health and agreeableness infinitely superior to any thing within forty miles of Charles Town, but also by far the most profitable to the planter. The soil is there greatly superior for every production except rice ; this superiority would alone more than equal the

* *Gent. Mag.* Vol. xxv. p. 258.

amount of 661. besides the product of lumber. All the accounts we have had of this country only confirm the truth of the general observation, that the back country is that to settle.

Besides rice and indigo, there are some other staples cultivated in Carolina, which though not of any great importance, yet demand a little attention. Cotton thrives well in the soil and climate, and though it is applied at present only to the home consumption of the province, yet it might certainly be extended so as to become a considerable article of exportation. Indigo and rice at present engross all their attention, not because they cannot raise other staples, but because these, while the demand is great, are more profitable. Cotton will hereafter be a valuable staple. Wine, silk, oil, hemp, and flax, are other products, which in the back country may be cultivated in the greatest plenty; but this is not to be expected, till the value of that healthy and fertile part of our southern colonies is better known and peopled.

It is an observation that demands much national attention, that this very important colony should cultivate more staples than rice and indigo; it is of consequence
that

that our colonies should not depend on one or two staples which are not of a permanent nature: indigo is the only article that ranks among the staples of South Carolina, which is secure of a future sale, proportioned to the future increase of culture: I do not think that this is the case with rice, the sale of which depends very minutely on the plenty of corn in Germany, the North, Spain, and Portugal; for in those countries is its principal sale; and the immense growth of the rice plantations in Carolina has of late years been much owing to a great failure in the corn crops of Europe, a failure which has been and is at present likely to prove of no slight advantage to this colony.

But silk, wine, oil, hemp, flax, &c. not forgetting tobacco, would, if well attended to in the back country, secure to this province those advantages which can only flow from the possession of various staples in common demand throughout the world; by which means, their profit would be greater than at present, and under the security of a much longer duration than will ever be found attendant on the exportation of rice.

Be-

Besides these articles, which are at present cultivated in large or small quantities, (it is to be observed that every one of the products here mentioned are planted for private use, and in some in small quantities for sale) there are others which deserve mention ; among these we find an exportation of the same fruits which are sent from Spain and Portugal, oranges, lemons, citrons, &c. pitch, tar, turpentine, rosin, naval timber, pot-ash, saffraas, lumber, tallow, wax, leather, skins, &c. These are articles which demand attention, and for which all endeavours should be tried to increase, since it is a number of staples upon which a flourishing colony depends for any permanency of prosperity : and this is the more necessary, as in proportion as the settlements extend, in such proportion does the benefit of lumber fall off ; since the clearing the woods pays the expence in lumber only in the maritime part of the province: now in plantations which are deprived of the advantage of lumber, there must accrue a certain loss, if a variety of staples be not introduced. Indigo and tobacco employ only the negroes the summer half of the year, and leave time sufficient for silk in the spring,

an harvest in summer, and a vintage in autumn, besides the winter for other purposes, and completing the labour of other staples.

This object deserves the more attention, from the circumstance of the eagerness of the Carolina planters in the culture of their grand staples, rice and indigo, which is carried on to such a degree, as to render them little solicitous about other objects. Herein they consult what we are to look for from all mankind, great attention to what they think their present interests, and very little idea of futurity; this disposition which is so general among all people, does very well for the present time, and for present interests, but it will rarely, if ever, bring in those improvements, which, in the introduction of new staples, become, in future, objects of the greatest importance. It is in such points as these that the attention of government is wanted, which can alone effect such material improvements, by bringing people to an attention to other objects, besides their immediate interests, by rewards and other encouragement.

The administration of our government has in these instances shewn too great an inattention to such important objects; our colonies

colonies have increased greatly in population and product, which has satisfied us, although the benefits received might have been greatly increased, and been of such a nature, as to promise a much longer and more secure duration than what they enjoy at present.

C H A P. XXII.

*Account of the means, expence, and profit of forming a plantation in South Carolina—
Explanations—Remarks.*

SOUTH Carolina has of late years increased in a most prodigious degree, both in people and the exportation of valuable staples, which has been owing to several causes I shall mention hereafter ; and this great increase, with the fortunes made by planting in this part of the continent, have induced very great numbers to settle in this province, and it is much to the advantage of Great Britain that this is so ; for in all these provinces to the south, valuable staples are produced, which enable the inhabitants to purchase the manufactures of Britain, a case not to be met with in
the

the northern settlements : for this reason it is highly expedient, that the profit accruing from agriculture in this province be well understood, that all those persons who are in doubt which part of America they should go to, may be induced to make choice of those colonies which produce staples for Britain ; among which South Carolina figures greatly.

A calculation drawn from actual experience of the expences, produce, and profit of a considerable plantation in this province.

	l.	s.	d.
Freight and expences of six persons in one family, from London to Charles Town, at 25l. - - - - -	150	0	0
Freight of 10 tons, at 40s. - - - - -	20	0	0
A couple of riding horses, - - - - -	40	0	0
Expences in searching for a plantation, - - - - -	40	0	0
Patent fees of 10,000 acres, - - - - -	62	10	0
Building a house, - - - - -	200	0	0
— offices, rice barns, &c. - - - - -	700	0	0
— tobacco-house, - - - - -	20	0	0
— saw-mill, - - - - -	500	0	0
Furniture, - - - - -	150	0	0
A canoe, - - - - -	50	0	0
Boats, - - - - -	30	0	0
Year's house keeping, - - - - -	120	0	0
Implements of culture, - - - - -	200	0	0
20 horses at 5l. - - - - -	100	0	0
100 cows at 30s. - - - - -	150	0	0
Swine, - - - - -	20	0	0
Poultry, - - - - -	5	0	0
Carried over	2557	10	0

416 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward,	2557	10	0
Wear and tear of implements,	-	20	0

Sundry labour exclusive of negroes.

On cattle,	-	-	15	0	0
100 acres of wheat at 20s.	100	0	0		
40 acres of oats at 16s.	32	0	0		
10 potatoes at 40s.	20	0	0		
Making hay,	-	-	20	0	0
Orchard and garden,	15	0	0		
Sundries,	-	-	30	0	0
				232	0
40 negroes at 50l.	-	-	-	2000	0

Expences on ditto.

Overfeer,	-	-	-	1	0	0
Cloaths,	-	-	-	1	0	0
Sundry expences,	-	-	-	0	10	0
Province tax,	-	-	-	0	3	0
					2	13
					0	86

Seed.

100 acres of wheat, at 8s.	40	0	0
40 oats 8s.	16	0	0
10 potatoes 8s.	4	0	0
		60	0

Taxes ; a quit-rent of 2s. per 100 acres,	10	0	0
---	----	---	---

Two year's interest at 5 per cent.	4965	10	0
	496	10	0

		5462	10	0
--	-------	------	----	---

Interest,	-	-	-	-	273	10	0
-----------	---	---	---	---	-----	----	---

Pro-

Produce of second year.

	l.	s.	d.
100 acres of wheat, 20 bushels an acre, at 3s.	300	0	0
40 negroes at 15l.	600	0	0
	<u>900</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>

Third year.

Expences.

Taxes as before,	10	0	0
Repairs of buildings,	50	0	0
House-keeping,	100	0	0
Implements	40	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	50	0	0
Interest,	273	1	0
Freight of products to shipping,	80	0	0
Expences on 40 negroes at 2l. 13s.	86	0	0
	<u>£. 889</u>	<u>1</u>	<u>0</u>

Produce of third Year.

Wheat,	300	0	0
40 negroes at 25l.	1000	0	0
A saw-mill of 7 saws will cut 5000 feet of boards per week, at 6s. per 100 feet, 15l. per week, which is per annum,	780	0	0
Deduct labour, repairs, freight and fundries,	280	0	0
Remains	<u>500</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>
But say		0	0
	<u>£. 1300</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>

418 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

Fourth year.

Expences.

	l.	s.	d.
Taxes,	10	0	0
Repairs of buildings,	50	0	0
House-keeping,	100	0	0
Implements,	40	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	50	0	0
Interest	273	1	0
Freight,	80	0	0
15 negroes at 50l.	750	0	0
Expences on 55 ditto at 2l. 13s.	145	15	0
	<u>£. 1698</u>	<u>16</u>	<u>0</u>

Produce.

Wheat,	300	0	0
40 negroes at 25l.	1000	0	0
15 ditto at 20l.	300	0	0
	<u>£. 1600</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>

Fifth year.

Expences.

Taxes,	10	0	0
Buildings,	50	0	0
House-keeping,	100	0	0
Implements,	40	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Interest,	273	1	0
Freight,	110	0	0
10 negroes,	500	0	0
65 ditto at 2l. 13s.	172	5	0
	<u>£. 1508</u>	<u>6</u>	<u>0</u>

Produce.

	l.	s.	d.
Wheat, - - - - -	300	0	0
55 negroes at 25l. - - - - -	1375	0	0
10 at 20l. - - - - -	200	0	0
Saved last year, - - - - -	300	0	0
	£. 2175	0	0

Sixth year.

Expences.

Taxes, - - - - -	10	0	0
Buildings, - - - - -	50	0	0
House-keeping, - - - - -	100	0	0
Implements, - - - - -	40	0	0
Labour, - - - - -	200	0	0
Incidents, - - - - -	53	0	0
Interest, - - - - -	273	1	0
Freight, - - - - -	140	0	0
25 negroes at 50l. - - - - -	1250	0	0
90 ditto at 2l. 13s. - - - - -	238	10	0
	£. 2354	11	0

Produce.

Wheat, - - - - -	300	0	0
Cattle (supposed by this time to bring in } a regular profit, - - - - -	100	0	0
65 negroes at 25l. - - - - -	1625	0	0
25 ditto at 20l. - - - - -	500	0	0
	£. 2525	0	0

Seventh year.

Expences.

Taxes, - - - - -	10	0	0
Buildings, - - - - -	50	0	0

E e 2 Carried over £. 60 0 0

420 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward	60	0	0
House-keeping,	100	0	0
Implements,	40	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Interest,	273	1	0
Freight,	140	0	0
30 negroes at 50l.	1500	0	0
120 ditto at 2l. 13s.	318	0	0
	<u>£. 2684</u>	<u>1</u>	<u>0</u>

Produce.			
Wheat,	300	0	0
Cattle,	100	0	0
90 negroes at 25l.	2250	0	0
30 ditto at 20l.	600	0	0
	<u>£. 3250</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>

Eighth year.

<i>Expences.</i>			
Taxes,	10	0	0
Buildings,	50	0	0
House-keeping,	100	0	0
Implements,	40	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Interest,	273	1	0
Freight,	180	0	0
36 negroes at 50l.	1800	0	0
156 ditto at 2l. 13s.	413	8	0
	<u>£. 3119</u>	<u>9</u>	<u>0</u>

Produce.			
Wheat,	300	0	0
Cattle,	100	0	0
	<u>£. 400</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>
Carried over	£. 400	0	0

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 421

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward	400	0	0
120 negroes at 25l.	3000	0	0
36 ditto at 20l.	720	0	0
	<u>£. 4120</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>

Ninth year.

Expences.

Taxes,	-	-	-	10	0	0
Buildings,	-	-	-	50	0	0
House-keeping,	-	-	-	100	0	0
Implements,	-	-	-	40	0	0
Labour,	-	-	-	200	0	0
Incidents,	-	-	-	53	0	0
Interest,	-	-	-	273	1	0
Freight,	-	-	-	180	0	0
60 negroes at 50l.	-	-	-	3000	0	0
216 ditto at 2l. 13s.	-	-	-	572	8	0
				<u>£. 4478</u>	<u>9</u>	<u>0</u>

Produce.

Wheat,	-	-	-	300	0	0
Cattle,	-	-	-	100	0	0
156 negroes at 25l.	-	-	-	3900	0	0
60 ditto at 20l.	-	-	-	1200	0	0
				<u>£. 5500</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>

Tenth year.

Expences.

Taxes,	-	-	-	10	0	0
Buildings,	-	-	-	60	0	0
House-keeping,	-	-	-	150	0	0
Implements,	-	-	-	80	0	0
				<u>300</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>
				Carried over	300	0 0

422 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward,	300	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Interest,	273	1	0
Freight,	200	0	0
80 negroes at 50l.	4000	0	0
296 ditto at 2l. 13s.	784	8	0
	£. 5810	9	0

Produce.

Wheat,	300	0	0
Cattle,	100	0	0
216 negroes at 25l.	5400	0	0
80 ditto at 20l.	1600	0	0
	£. 7400	0	0

Eleventh year.

Expences.

Taxes,	10	0	0
Buildings,	60	0	0
House-keeping,	150	0	0
Implements,	80	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Interest,	273	1	0
Freight,	200	0	0
110 negroes at 50l.	5500	0	0
406 ditto at 20l.	1075	18	0
	£. 7601	19	0

Produce.

Wheat,	300	0	0
Cattle,	100	0	0
Carried over,	400	0	0

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 423

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward,	400	0	0
296 negroes at 25l.	-	-	7400
110 ditto at 20l.	-	-	2200
	<u>£.</u>	<u>10,000</u>	<u>0 0</u>

Twelfth year.

Expences.

Taxes,	-	-	-	-	10	0	0
Buildings,	-	-	-	-	60	0	0
House-keeping,	-	-	-	-	150	0	0
Implements,	-	-	-	-	80	0	0
Labour,	-	-	-	-	200	0	0
Incidents,	-	-	-	-	53	0	0
Interest,	-	-	-	-	273	1	0
Freight,	-	-	-	-	200	0	0
150 negroes at 50l.	-	-	-	-	7500	0	0
556 ditto at 2l. 13s.	-	-	-	-	1473	8	0
					<u>£.</u>	<u>9999</u>	<u>9 0</u>

Produce.

Wheat,	-	-	-	-	300	0	0
Cattle,	-	-	-	-	100	0	0
406 negroes at 25l.	-	-	-	-	10,150	0	0
150 ditto at 20l.	-	-	-	-	3,000	0	0
					<u>£.</u>	<u>13,550</u>	<u>0 0</u>

And now having arrived at the greatest number of negroes met with on any plantation in Carolina, (above 500, which are found on two or three) it will be proper

424 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

to close the account with the next year,
by supposing no new ones bought.

Thirteenth year.

Expences.

	l.	s.	d.
Taxes,	10	0	0
Buildings,	70	0	0
House-keeping,	150	0	0
Implements,	80	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Interests,	273	1	0
Freight,	200	0	0
556 negroes at 2l. 13s.	1473	8	0
	£. 2509	9	0

Produce.

Wheat,	300	0	0
Cattle,	100	0	0
556 negroes at 25l.	13,900	0	0
	13,900	0	0
Expences,	2,509	9	0
Profit,	11,390	11	0
Housekeeping,	150	0	0
Interest,	273	1	0
Total receipt,	11,813	12	0

This profit is immense, and yet upon
revision there do not seem any articles that
are

are calculated too low. I am sensible that there are not any planters in South Carolina that lay up, or make an income of 12,000l. a year; but calculations of what may be done can take no cognizance of private conduct. There are some planters in this province who have more than 500 slaves; but very many causes may conspire to reduce their profit to a trifle, compared with what we see here: of 556 negroes only 40 were here supposed to be originally bought; all the rest were purchased annually by savings out of the preceding years products; but if instead of this the planter spends his income, and borrows money to increase his stock of slaves, the profit at the end of the term will turn out very differently. The great profit here stated, is entirely owing to an accumulation of profits for twelve years, the planter living upon 1000l. or 1500l. a year; but the event would prove very different if he takes at first a larger sum for his house-keeping; and if, instead of waiting the first twelve years patiently, in order afterwards to live more at his ease, and in almost any degree of affluence he pleases; if, instead of this, he frequents the taverns and concerts of Charles Town more than his plantation, any
man

man may, without much sagacity, account for calculation turning out differently from real life. The only means of coming at useful truth in such cases as this, is to calculate what may be done—what such a business, under given circumstances, can produce: as to the caprices of individuals, they are beyond the power of calculation; but the profit here supposed will admit of great deductions in several articles which seem the lowest set in expence, and yet the remainder will turn out so considerable, as to prove that planting in this country may be made the way to immense fortunes.

Now it must be apparent, at first sight, that no husbandry in Europe can equal this of Carolina; we have no agriculture in England, where larger fortunes are made by it than in any other country, that will pay any thing like this, owing to several circumstances which deserve attention. First, land is so plentiful in America, that the purchase of a very large estate costs but a trifle, and all the annual taxes paid afterwards for ten thousand acres, do not amount to what the window duty in England comes to on a moderate house; no land-tax, no poor's rate, no tythe. This
 plenty

plenty of land, which is at the same time so excellent, enables the planter to proportion his culture every year, to the saving of the preceding, which is the grand circumstance in the increase of his fortune ; since it is this which converts simple interest at 5 per cent. with an English farmer, to compound interest at 100 per cent. with an American planter. Were the waste lands of Britain in the same situation as those of America, to be granted to whoever would settle and engage to cultivate them, this would be the case with them ; but the profit from the inferiority of the land, and the dearth of labour, would not equal that above stated. As these wastes are private property, and cannot be gained by other people, there is no comparison remains between them ; and as to common agriculture, the profit of 20 or 30 per cent. without any ability of increasing the business annually, it cannot be named with this of America. Secondly, the price of labour is incomparably cheaper in Carolina than in Britain : a negro costs 2l. 13s. per annum, to which if we had 2l. 10s. the interest of his prime cost, the total is only 5l. 3s. and as the common calculation is, that one English labourer does as much work

work as two negroes, a labourer to the planter costs 10l. 6s. a year, whereas to an English farmer he costs from 20l. to 25l. The difference is 125 per cent. this article therefore is very decisive in favour of the planter. Thirdly, we are to remember the peculiar circumstance of the prices of the planter's products and consumptions: his crops, whether of indigo, tobacco, &c. are of a constant high value, the price rising, as it has done indeed for these fifty years; but his consumption of corn, meat, fruit, fowls, game, fish, &c. being chiefly the produce of his own plantation, stand him in little or nothing for his family. The common idea of the article game and fish is, that one Indian, or dextrous negro, will, with his gun and nets, get as much game and fish as five families can eat; and the slaves support themselves in provisions, besides raising the staples mentioned above; but in Britain the servants kept in the house cost the farmers 12l. or 15l. a head in board, besides his own house-keeping being in the same articles as those he sells from his farm; so that he cannot in his sale have the advantage of high prices, without being proportionally taxed in his consumption. This point in a large family

mily is of great importance, and would, if calculated for a course of years, be found to amount to a very considerable sum. Besides this great superiority in respect of profit, the pleasing circumstance of being a considerable freeholder, and living in a most plentiful, and even luxurious manner, is a point that has nothing among British farmers for opposition to it.

These three grand articles, plenty of good land free from taxes—cheapness of labour—and dearness of product sold, with cheapness of that consumed, are, united, sufficient to explain the causes of a Carolina planter having such vastly superior opportunities of making a fortune than a British farmer can possibly enjoy.

Considered in a national light, no bad consequences can result from making known the great profit which may be made by planting in Carolina; for all the inhabitants of this province are well employed for Britain, and husbandry is too profitable an employment for them to suffer any one to think of manufactures; all their cloathing, furniture, tools, and a variety of other articles, come from Britain, besides the exportation and importation employing many ships and seamen for the mother-country.

Nor

Nor are we ever to forget the great importance of taking every measure to induce new settlers in our colonies, emigrants from Europe, to fix in those settlements, which from climate, soil, and staples, are of such importance to Britain, as the West Indies, Carolina, and the tobacco colonies are found to be.

If the state of Europe at present be considered, which is that of a military state, from one end to the other, inasmuch that in some parts of this quarter of the world the military out-number the rest of the men ; if this be considered, surely all mankind must think, with peculiar pleasure, of a country which holds forth an asylum to protect them from the cruelties of the military government, and the horrible oppressions of the despotic sway in all other matters : these are such curses on human nature, that it is astonishing any men of small fortunes, or to the amount of from one to five or six thousand pounds, should remain in such countries, that deny them most of the comforts, enjoyments and security of life. On the contrary, these southern colonies of the British dominions in America hold forth the very contrast to the unhappiness they experience in Europe. They may have
what-

whatever land they please, at a price next to nothing; that land as rich, if chosen with judgment, as in any country in the world; in a climate that produces the richest commodities, and at the same time abounds with all the necessaries of life, in a plenty not to be equalled throughout any other countries on the globe; and at the same time that both soil and climate, and plenty of land, join to yield such advantageous offers: the government is the most mild in being; liberty reigns in perfection; taxes are too inconsiderable to be mentioned; no military service; no oppressions to enslave the planter, and rob him of the fruits of his industry. When all these great and manifest advantages are considered, I think it must appear surprising, that more emigrants from different parts of Europe are not constantly moving from thence to America: nothing but that love for the native country, universal thro' mankind, could prevent whole crowds of people from flying from misery and oppression, to wealth and freedom.

The calculation here inserted is that only of a considerable plantation; but it is a circumstance peculiarly fortunate, in the husbandry of those parts of America where
negroes

negroes are used, that a small, and even the smallest plantation is proportionally as profitable as the largest. There is no necessity of employing an overseer for the negroes; if the number is small, the planter himself takes that office on him. Men establish even such small plantations, as employ only two or three negroes, and make by them a sum proportioned to what their more considerable neighbour enjoys from as many hundreds: indigo is of that nature in the culture, that even a single negro may be employed on it; since the apparatus for it does not even, for three or four slaves, cost above ten or a dozen pounds. Husbandry in England on so small a scale is carried on with scarce any advantage; for no profit, public or private, accrues from the smallest scale of farms; since our best writers on the subject of husbandry agree, that the occupiers of such farms live much harder and fare worse than our day-labourers. But nothing can be more different than this from Carolina, where the little planter, whose freehold amounts only to one or two hundred acres, with his two or three negroes, makes not only a most comfortable living for himself, but also such an annual profit, that if he is at all saving
and

and diligent, he may speedily increase his negroes and his plantation, and in no long term of years become a man of handsome fortune.

And here let me once more observe, that the calculations which have been given are particularly deduced from the circumstances of the back country, and not from the culture of rice in the destructive and unwholesome swamps on the coast; so that this large degree of profit is to be gained in a country whose climate is equal to the soil, being healthy and pleasant to as great a degree as any country in a hot climate that is to be found in the world; and to the generality of constitutions, taking the world through, perhaps more wholesome than many parts of Europe. Was such a profit only to be made by cultivating rice swamps, I should be far enough from dwelling upon the advantages of it; but as they flow not from rice, but indigo, tobacco, corn, hemp, flax, &c. which admit of culture better in the back country than on the coast, all the benefits I have dwelt on are reaped without any such attendant inconveniencies as are met with in the rice plantations; a circumstance of infinite im-

portance to the mother-country as well as to the colony.

C H A P. XXIII.

Exports of South Carolina at different periods—Rapid progress of the trade of this province—Present state—Remarks.

THE great increase of the population of the northern colonies is not near of such advantage to Great Britain as that of the southern ones, which in proportion to the increase of population has a corresponding increase in the production of true staple commodities, the circumstance on which the interest of Britain depends; those colonies which have not staples, we have found from long experience, can afford to purchase but a small part of their manufactures and other necessaries from the mother-country; common agriculture will not effect it; accordingly we see, that in the northern settlements, that is, the settlements to the north of Maryland, they are forced to make up their deficiency of staples by fisheries and commerce, in both of which articles

articles they interfere considerably with Britain; so that their import of manufactures is by no means of the value of that of the southern settlements, as they get the money to make their purchases, by rivalling the fisheries and commerce of Britain. Hence therefore appears the constant expediency of watching anxiously the increase of population in the southern parts of America, and taking every measure to increase it. Nor can any conduct in the administration of our government be of such great importance, as inducing the people settled in the northern colonies to quit them in favour of the southern ones. The truth and propriety of these sentiments will appear from the following tables of the exports of South Carolina.

Exports from Charles Town from Nov. 1747, to Nov. 1748.

COMMODITIES.			Rates.		Amount Sterling.	
Corn and Grain.						
Rice,	-	55,000 bushels	0	6	5 per 100 lb.	£. 88,600
Indian corn,	-	39,308 bushels	0	1	5 per bushel	2,789
Barley,	-	15 casks	0	14	3 per cask	10
Roots and fruit.						
Oranges,	-	296,000 in number	0	17	1 per 1000	251
Pease,	-	6,107 bushels	0	1	5 bushel	432
Potatoes,	-	700 bushels	0	0	8 bushel	23
Onions,	-	10 casks,	0	14	3 cask	7
	-	200 ropes	0	0	4 rope	3
Cattle, Beef, &c.						
Live stock,	Bullocks,	28	1	11	5 bullock	44
	Hogs,	158	0	8	6 hog	63
	Sundries,					357
Beef,	-	1764 barrels	0	18	6 barrel	1631
Pork,	-	3114 barrels	1	8	6 barrel	4436
Bacon, about	-	2200 lb.	0	0	4 lb.	36
Butter,	-	130 casks	1	2	10 cask	148
Naval Stores.						
Pitch,	-	5521 barrels	0	6	5 barrel	1771

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 437

Tar { Common,	-	2784 barrels	0	5	0	ditto	-	-	-	696
Green,	-	291 ditto	0	7	1	ditto	-	-	-	103
Turpentine,	-	2397 ditto	0	7	1	ditto	-	-	-	847
Rosin,	-	97 ditto	0	7	1	ditto	-	-	-	34
Masts,	-	9 in number	2	2	10	each	-	-	-	19
Bowsprits,	-	8 in number	0	17	1	each	-	-	-	7
Booms,	-	6 in number	1	8	6	each	-	-	-	8
Oars,	-	50 pair	0	2	10	pair	-	-	-	5
<i>Vegetable produce of</i>										
<i>other sorts.</i>										
Indigo,	-	134,118 lb.	0	2	6	per lb.	-	-	-	16,764
Pot ashes,	-	3 barrels	2	17	1	barrel	-	-	-	8
Oil of turpentine,	-	9 jars	1	8	6	jar	-	-	-	13
Cotton wool,	-	7 barrels	2	2	10	barrel	-	-	-	15
Sassafras,	-	7 bags	3	11	5	bag	-	-	-	25
Lumber.	-	22 tons	2	2	10	ton	-	-	-	67
Boards,	-	61,148 feet	5	14	3	per 1000 feet,	-	-	-	349
Cedar boards,	-	8,189 ditto	0	17	1	per 100	-	-	-	70

Carried over, £. 119,631

Lumber.	Quantities.	Rates.			Amount Sterling.	
					Brought over, £.	
Cedar plank,	-	0	1	5	-	92
— posts	-	0	1	5	-	3
Cypress boards,	-	5	14	3	-	111
Ditto,	-	0	1	9	-	84
Heading,	-	5	14	3	-	79
Ditto,	-	4	5	8	-	546
Ditto pine,	-	5	14	3	-	84
Ditto,	-	0	0	10	-	53
Ditto plank,	-	0	2	1	-	2
Baywood plank	-	0	8	6	-	41
Scantling,	-	0	10	0	-	10
Shingles,	-	0	11	5	-	364
Staves,	-	4	5	8	-	567
Timber,	-	0	14	3	-	28
Ditto,	-	0	5	8	-	2
Walnut,	-	1	14	3	-	13
Ditto,	-	0	2	10	-	10
Hogheads,	-	0	8	6	-	34
Tierces,	-	0	7	1	-	16
Floops,	-	1	14	3	-	5

[illegible]

Sundry articles exported from Charles Town in 1754.

	Quantities.	Rates.	Amount Sterling.
Rice,	104,682 barrels	1 15 0 per barrel	£. 183,193
Indigo,	216,924 lb.	0 2 6 lb.	27,115
Deer-skins,	460 hhd.	50 0 0 each	23,000
Pitch,	5,869 barrels	0 6 5 per barrel	1,881
Tar,	2,945 ditto	0 5 0 ditto	736
Turpentine,	759 ditto	0 7 1 ditto	266
Beef,	416 ditto	0 18 6 ditto	384
Pork,	1,560 ditto	1 8 6 ditto	2,223
Indian corn,	16,428 bushels	0 2 0 per bushel	1,642
Pease,	9,162 ditto	0 1 5 ditto	648
Shingles,	1,114,000 in number	0 11 5 per 1000	631
Staves,	260,000 ditto	4 5 8 ditto	880
Total of these articles,	-	-	£. 242,529
			These

These articles not containing the whole export, the total does not shew the full increase; but rice and indigo being the two grand staples of the province, their increase shews how quick the cultivation of South Carolina had advanced in those years.

Exported in ten months, 1761, from Charles Town.

	Quantities.	Rates.	Amount Sterling.
Rice,	-	1 15 0 per barrel	£. 175,000
Pitch,	-	0 6 5 ditto	2,043
Tar,	-	0 5 0 ditto	232
Turpentine,	-	0 7 1 ditto	1,702
Oranges,	-	0 17 1 per 1000	137
Ditto,	-	-	-
Pork and beef,	-	1 13 0 per barrel	1,894
Bacon,	-	-	-
Indigo,	-	0 2 6 per lb.	49,920
Deer-skins,	-	50 1 0 0 each	21,100
331 bundles	-	-	-
300 loose	-	-	-
			Carried over, £. 252,028

Quantities.	Rates.	Amount Sterling.	
		Brought forward	£.
Tanned leather,	5,869 fides	-	252,028
Pease and corn,	11,126 bushels	-	784
Bees wax,	6,721 lb.	-	224
Staves,	236,850 in number	-	1,014
Boards, &c.	466,186 feet	-	2,657
Hoops,	29,600 in number	-	50
Besides many other articles.		-	£. 256,767
		This	

This incomplete table shews another considerable increase of export, and the following will continue the progression.

Exported from South Carolina upon an average of three years succeeding the peace of 1762.

	l.	s.	d.
Rice 110,002 barrels at 40s. -	220,000	0	0
Pitch, tar, and turpentine, 8000 barrels, at 6s. 8d. -	2,666	13	4
Pickled pork and beef, -	25,000	0	0
Deer and other skins, -	45,000	0	0
Indigo 500,000 lb. at 2s. -	50,000	0	0
Boards, masts, staves, joists, &c. -	20,000	0	0
Indian corn, pease, beans, and calavanches, -	12,000	0	0
Live stock and fundries, -	15,000	0	0
Ships built for sale, 10 at 600l. -	6,000	0	0
Total, £.	395,666	13	4

And since this account I have been favoured with another for the year 1771, which is as follows :

	l.	s.	d.
140,000 barrels of rice, at 3l. 10s. -	490,000	0	0
Pitch, tar, and turpentine, 10,000 barrels, at 10s. -	5,000	0	0
Pork and beef, -	30,000	0	0
Corn and other provisions, -	13,500	0	0
Deer-skins, &c. -	50,000	0	0
Lumber, -	32,000	0	0
Live stock, -	17,000	0	0
Ten ships, -	6,000	0	0
Indigo, 750,000 lb. at 3s. -	112,500	0	0
Total, £.	756,000	0	0

This

This account shews in how extraordinary a manner the improvement of South Carolina has been carried on ; and it has been a peculiar felicity to this province, that the prices of its staples have risen considerably at the same time that the quantity raised has increased immensely. This circumstance, which is of such uncommon value, has advanced the interests of the country prodigiously, and now renders it one of the most flourishing colonies we possess in America ; at the same time that the quantity of land which yet remains to be cultivated, is beyond comparison greater than what is yet improved. It is also to be remembered, that the parts unsettled being more rich, fertile, and healthy, than the coast which yields the commodities hitherto exported, and is in particular far more luxuriant in the production of indigo : now it is to be observed, that the grand staple of this province, rice, has not so good a probability of future increase as indigo ; the latter is so valuable a [drug, and produced in so few countries, that Carolina may look forwards to almost any quantity, even till the whole consumption of Europe, America, and parts of Africa and Asia, are satisfied, before a stop will be put to her market

ket for this commodity ; for there is little doubt of her being able to undersell both French and Spaniards. But with rice, the case may be different ; for being an article of food, it is rivalled by other articles : good harvests of wheat in Europe and Africa would sink the price ; for it has risen from 15s. and 20s. a barrel to 3l. 10s. and 4l. from the high price of wheat in Europe ; if grain should fall much, the price of rice must fall with it : indeed it is at present so dear, that the rate may fall greatly, and yet leave the planter sufficient inducement to increase the culture of it.

The exports of this province will not be many years in rising to a million sterling ; it will gain this point of equality with Virginia and Maryland put together, before it has a fifth of the inhabitants found in those provinces, which shews how valuable the climate is to produce so largely in exportable staples. I do not compare the staples, for certainly tobacco is far more valuable to Britain than rice, and perhaps than indigo ; but tobacco is produced in the back part of South Carolina, and of a quality superior to that of Virginia ; the quantity however is but small yet : a navigation for large canoes that will carry from five to

ten ton, is wanting, when you get far back, which navigation in the culture of tobacco is very necessary.

C H A P. XXIV.

Improvements proposed in the culture of this province.

HOWEVER wealthy the production of staples may make a country, it is common husbandry alone on which first depends the interest of any people; and it ever behoves them much to carry this to as high a degree as possible. All our American colonists are very bad farmers; this is a remark I have had occasion to make when treating of every one of them: it is almost uniformly owing to the great plenty of land, which enables every body to gain the necessaries of life with so much ease, that an accurate and industrious cultivation appears useless.

The productions of common husbandry in Carolina, by which I mean corn and provisions of all sorts, have risen of late years to so high a price, that I have been assured by several considerable planters and

mer-

merchants in this province, that the farmers who have employed their negroes on these objects alone have in several years made a larger profit than has been gained from rice and indigo ; and that on an average, there has been an equality. This is a circumstance of prodigious consequence, since the common husbandry is exercised in the healthy and agreeable back country, while rice only is to be had in the swamps in the flat, maritime, and unhealthy part.

The articles cultivated are wheat (which grain will not thrive in the flat country) Indian corn, Indian pease, barley, buck-wheat, tatoes, and other roots, fruit, &c. The hilly part of the province is wonderfully fertile in these products, yielding, in very bad modes of culture, crops equal to what good husbandry will produce on many tracts of land in Britain. But this excellence of soil and climate is very badly seconded by the skill of the farmer. Indian corn is the principal grain they raise, which is managed in the manner I have described before ; they are very defective in the article of keeping the plantations of it clean from weeds : the culture the intervals receive is only that of an insufficient hand-hoeing or two ; but, instead of this, the horse-

horse-hoeing husbandry should be applied: the spaces between the rows should both ways be horse-hoed, for the double purpose of keeping them free from weeds, and in a loose pulverized state; and likewise for earthing up the plants, which might be performed with a plough much more effectually than with hand-hoes, and for a tenth of the expence: the latter never cut deep enough, only skimming the surface, whereas horse-hoeings and hoe-ploughs loosen it to any depth, giving the roots of the plants the power of penetrating into fresh earth, instead of confining them to their hillocks. This single improvement in the management of Indian corn would vastly increase the profit of that culture.

It is the custom in all the southern colonies to sow Indian pease with Indian corn, for the sake of their twining up the stalks of the latter; this renders the culture the more beneficial, as the product of pease is as valuable, and sometimes more so, than that of the corn itself. I would by no means condemn a custom which has an appearance of reason for it; but as such practices in most other branches of husbandry are found very disadvantageous, it is at least worth some accurate experiments to decide whether

ther as much is not lost in the Indian corn as is gained in the pease by this method, which may possibly be the case; the product of such large and vigorous plants as Maize, usually is proportioned to the nourishment the roots meet with, and certainly the pease cannot grow out of the same hillock without robbing them of much nourishment. A good hop-planter would think it very bad management to set a cabbage or a pea in a hop-hillock; bad ones plant the intervals, but good hop farmers decline even this practice; not because crops so gained would not be valuable, but because more would be lost in hops than gained in the other plants.

As to the preparation of the land for maize, wheat, barley, &c. it is nearly similar; they take a piece of fresh land, and plant it perhaps with indigo, which it yields as long as any heart remains sufficient in the soil for that exhausting crop; then they plant it with wheat or Indian corn, and afterwards with barley; and when it will yield nothing any longer, they leave it to itself, and treat other pieces in succession in the same manner. This is the system of all the provinces from New England to Florida; and it is a system

from which they will all by-and-bye feel the most monstrous inconvenience. When indigo is not planted, the first crop is Indian corn, which they follow by a second and perhaps a third of the same grain; then wheat or barley as long as the land will allow.

To this miserable husbandry it is owing, that the province wants pasture, which is only to be found in the woods or in drained rice swamps; though the planters all know the importance of cattle to them, they never think of sowing any grasses, but exhaust and ruin the land by corn, &c. and leave it, not a pasture, but a desert: the heat of the climate is so great that there is a want of good meadow in summer, and this makes the woods the natural pasture of the country in its unimproved state. But this evil might be remedied by sowing grasses, provided the land was laid to them while it was in some heart. The grass, when properly conducted, would be as profitable as the corn, and it might be gained without any decrease in the quantity of corn, in a country where land is so plentiful: this observation is particularly applicable to Carolina, where the land is cleared with so much ease; a given quantity

tity of acres in this province is cleared of all the timber with infinitely more ease than one tenth of the land would be in Europe, with the advantage also of the timber paying the expence ; and if oak or pine, more than the expence.

Suppose a planter has negroes sufficient to have every year 500 acres of corn, 250 acres Indian corn, 150 wheat, 100 barley, buckwheat, &c. If his system of crops is

1. Indian corn.
2. Ditto.
3. Ditto.
4. Wheat.
5. Wheat.
6. Barley.
7. Barley.

He then is able to support the system, by taking in a seventh of the 500 acres for fresh land every year, that is, 71 acres ; and he has always 500 acres in culture, with no other profit from the rest of his estate than what the woods yield him ; he leaves 71 acres barren and useless every year, which will soon run through a large grant ; for some years the land is absolutely nought, then shrubs come, and by degrees forest wood rises, and it is an age before it can

yield any profit. Now on the contrary, let us suppose his system

1. Indian corn.
2. Ditto.
3. Potatoes, pease, beans, legumes, &c.
4. Wheat.

5. Barley, and with it clovers, sainfoine, or lucerne. In this system he must take in 100 acres every year, and he every year lays down 100 acres to grass. The second year of pursuing such a plan he has 200 acres grass; the third year 300; the fourth year 400; and so on. By which means his whole estate will be in a profitable condition, and he will every year have a greater plenty of food for his cattle; the consequence of which will be his stocks of cattle will be larger, and better fed; he will raise much greater quantities of manure, and two acres of his corn must inevitably produce more grain than three in the other system.

Relative to the grass, which should upon these principles be cultivated, the heat of the climate will make it necessary to have recourse to such plants as have a long tap root, because by rooting deep they will be more out of the power of the sun: sainfoine and lucerne I should suppose would be

be found of singular utility, especially the latter; both these plants have been brought into the colder parts of Europe from very hot countries. Lucerne is indigenous in Media and Asia Minor, and sainfoine in Calabria and Barbary; there can be no doubt therefore of their succeeding admirably on the dry tracts of land in the back parts of Carolina, and also in all the sandy hilly parts of the province. The culture would be attended with none of those inconveniencies which have been found in England, from the moisture of the climate choaking the plantations with natural grass and weeds: the heat of climate would entirely prevent these evils upon land well prepared; nor can any doubt be made but the crops would be very considerable upon the fertile black loams of the interior country, and yield such plenty of food, both green and in hay, as to enable the planters to increase their stocks of cattle prodigiously.

It is much to be doubted whether the clovers would succeed in the maritime parts of the province; but no hesitation can be made about it in the interior country; and in this I ground my opinion upon the case of wheat, which thrives admirably two

hundred or two hundred and fifty miles from the coast, but will come to nothing in the flat country: there can be no doubt but it would be the same with clover, which has been found profitable in all countries where wheat is cultivated. It should be made the general preparation for wheat in every system, as it is equally (in this respect) adapted to all climates in which it will grow, and to almost every sort of land. In such climates as South Carolina there is likewise a circumstance in it, as a preparation for wheat, that much exceeds any other; a fallow or a tillage crop leaves the soil in so loose and hollow a state, that the roots of wheat, or any other fibrous-rooted plant, are too much exposed to the sun's rays; whereas, if it is sown in a clover lay, the particles of the soil are kept in a state of adhesion by the roots and fibres of the clover, which is an effect that in such a climate must be attended with excellent consequences. With a view to this, the clover husbandry, common in Britain of leaving it only one year upon the land, might not be so adviseable in Carolina; it might be better to let the clover be two, or perhaps three years old before it is ploughed for wheat, in order
the

the more completely to bind the soil together, especially in sandy land. The crops of this grass would, like sainfoine or lucerne, prove of great use to the planter, either in green food, or mown for hay, and maintain him twenty times the stock that the same land would do if under wood.

In the system above proposed, as an improvement of that of the Carolina farmers, there are several corn crops in succession, under the supposition that they would not at once come into an entire change, but the true principles of good husbandry are the same in Carolina as every where else; successive *exhausting* crops ought never to be found: between every two of that nature, one should intervene which is of a meliorating nature, or at least which does not exhaust. It has been found in all the countries where the clovers have been cultivated, that the land improves under them. The same observation has been made upon potatoes, carrots, and other roots. Turneps and cabbages yielding crops before they perfect their seed, have the same quality. The grand principle of modern husbandry, is to use these plants as fallows, or preparations for exhausting crops: and the principle is equally good, whether the ex-

hausting crop be sugar, wheat, indigo, or barley. The only distinction to be made, is for the planter to chuse such of them as will pay best in his country: fortunately, all of them are food for cattle, and there is no part of the world in which cattle are not valuable, or in the cultivated parts of it, where good husbandry does not greatly depend on cattle. In South Carolina nothing pays better, and the near neighbourhood of the West Indies affords an excellent market for as much meat and live stock as can possibly be raised: but the importance of having plenty of cultivated food for cattle, increases every day in this province; in proportion as the country is cultivated, the forest which was spread over the whole of it decreases, and consequently will maintain the less; this is so much felt in some districts, that many planters, who formerly kept immense herds of cattle, can now have but very moderate ones: it therefore much behoves them to cultivate grass and winter food for cattle, as well as corn. Potatoes in this province yield as good a price, both for home consumption and the West Indies, as in many parts of Britain; for of late years they have
fold

sold at 1s. and 1s. 3d. a bushel, consequently no crop can be more profitable.

Upon these principles, might not such a system as the following be rationally recommended to the farmers of South Carolina?

1. Indian corn.
2. Potatoes.
3. Indian corn.
4. Pease or beans.
5. Barley.
6. Clover.
7. Wheat.

In this system no two exhausting crops come together; pease or beans, and in general the plants which bear a leguminous flower, being of a different nature from corn in this respect. Or to suit particular purposes, variations might be made.

1. Indian corn.
2. Potatoes.
3. Barley.
4. Clover.
5. Wheat.
6. Turneps or cabbages.
7. Indian corn.
8. Pease or beans.
9. Wheat.
10. Potatoes.

11. Bar-

- 11. Barley.
- 12. Clover.
- 13. Wheat.
- 14. Cabbages, &c.
- 15. Wheat.

16. Lucerne, or other grasses, to remain. In such a system of crops, the land would always be rich and clean ; the planter would be able to keep vast stocks of cattle ; in fifteen years he would sell nine crops of corn and two of potatoes, and at the end of it he would have a much more fertile pasture than he found at the beginning.

Partial trials of new recommended practices may turn out very unsuccessful without proving any thing against them. Suppose a Carolina farmer, struck with the idea of clover, sainfoine, or lucerne, was to throw it in among the second or third crop of wheat or barley, which followed two or three of maize ; in such a mode of conduct, chance perhaps might give him a poor crop, instead of none at all, which he would have reason to expect ; he might neglect those grasses in future from such an experiment, but surely with very little reason ; for such a conduct would be like expecting a great crop of rice on a mountain-top, or fields of pine apples in the snows

snows of Lapland. For this reason, such recommended practices had better not be tried at all, than to be partially or incompletely tried; since conclusions, however absurd, are sure to be drawn from all experiments, and people will not be so ready to discriminate and enquire into the causes of a failure, as to look at the single point, *such a thing was tried, AND IT FAILED.* A comprehensive way of judging and talking, which saves the trouble of understanding and reflection.

Besides rectifying the very erroneous systems pursued in this province, it will be necessary to remark, that the farmers are not attentive even to making the most of the spontaneous growths, of which the natural meadows, are a proof; in many plantations they have savannah land, which in the back parts of the province is very good meadow; but the planters let their cattle run over the whole in summer, without ever thinking of mowing hay, notwithstanding the crops would often be considerable, and notwithstanding their cattle are sometimes half starved for want of it: it is not sufficient to say that a climate admits the cattle to be unhoused all winter; their being in the woods or pastures is of little

little consequence, if they can get nothing to eat: the best planters find the necessity of baiting their herds well every night when they come home from the woods in winter; for though the climate is at times amazingly hot, yet, as I have elsewhere shewn, the frosts in winter are severer than those of England.

This part of their ill conduct is owing in a good measure to another branch of it, which is their neglect of fences: it would not be true to say that they had none, but the fact is, that they are confined too much to the care of their rice, indigo, or other valuable crop, and are apt to attend to a field no longer than while it is so occupied: none of them would think (unless it were a few sensible, and at the same time wealthy men) that a meadow or pasture was worth fencing: this is through that neglect which arises from their great plenty of land.

It would be in vain to adopt an advantageous system of crops, if at the same time the planter was not attentive to have all his fences equally good; since in good husbandry, that field which is at present under a crop of small value, will in a few years be occupied by one of the greatest; the necessity therefore of this attention must

must be striking. In the management too common, one part of an estate is under corn, and all the rest is forest; but in the proposed improvement; every part once cultivated is always to be of value; cattle will be grazing in clover or lucerne in the midst of fields of Indian corn or wheat, and consequently all the fences under an equal necessity of being good.

In the culture of roots, &c. for the winter food of cattle, they are very deficient. Where there is a very great ability of keeping any stocks in summer, but a confined opportunity in winter, it is much to be questioned whether those crops which may be used as winter food, will not pay better in such an application, than when sold; and this particularly with potatoes: there are many advantages in using such crops upon the plantation; freight and carriage are saved, which are articles of importance; but the great point is the ability which the planter reaps from it of keeping so many more cattle, and raising so much the more dung, which they all agree is of the first consequence in making the most profit of their plantations: the effect we see in every part of Britain is similar to this; for the good farmers make it a rule never to sell those

those articles of their produce which are food for cattle, unless they bear a very great price, being sensible that it answers better to consume them at home.

In the culture of indigo, the Carolina planters are not so attentive as they might be: they err in their ideas of the soil which they chuse for it; because it will grow in a poor white pine barren, it has been very absurdly thought that this is the proper soil for it: indigo requires, if great crops would be gained, a rich, black, deep mould, such as is no where to be found near the sea, or at least only in small narrow slips adjoining the swamps, and even in them not comparable in fertility to large tracts in the interior country. Those planters who would wish to cultivate this drug to great profit, should fix in the back parts of the province, where the land is not only plentiful, but excellent; here they would raise treble the products they are able to do upon the coast, and the dye of a finer colour. In the culture of the plant, they are also too inattentive; the hand-hoeings given by the negroes are very insufficient, and not comparable to the use of several horse-hoes, which for other purposes are used in England. Hand-hoes in all operations between
the

the rows of any crop should give place to horse-work, which is deeper, more regular, and in every respect more effective ; at the same time that the expence of it does not near approach to that of hand-work.

There is another improvement which deserves mention here ; it is the culture of that species of rice which succeeds on dry ground, and even on hills and mountains. This sort is known in several parts of the East Indies, and would, in the back country of South Carolina, be of use as a new dependence for the planters there fixed ; and it would be much more advantageous to have this grain from a healthy country, than from the unwholesome swamps in the maritime part. It would be no difficult task to get some seed of it from India, and would at least be worth the trial.

The culture of vines has been attempted in the back part of South Carolina, and with success ; but the husbandry has not been prosecuted with that vigor and attention which so important an object well deserves. The moment any individuals shewed a desire of undertaking this branch—as soon as there was the least reason for thinking the plan feasible—their wishes ought to have been prevented—their wants
sup-

supplied—and every difficulty that arose, smoothed with the minutest attention. But instead of such a conduct being pursued, specimens of excellent wine have been sent home, and tasted by Lords of Trade, with application for encouragement in the undertakings made, and all without success. Were our governors bribed by the owners of the vineyards of Champagne and Burgundy, a more impolitic conduct could not have been pursued : had a due attention been paid to those ingenious and industrious foreigners who have settled in these southern colonies, and entered upon the vineyard culture, by this time American wine would have been common in the London vaults ; and the importance of this nation's buying her wines by the sale of her manufactures, is too obvious to need expatiating on. Such an undertaking as that, of planting vineyards in these provinces, should be taken in hand by government, at least in giving every assistance that could reasonably be required by those undertakers, who seemed to be well acquainted with what they were about ; but unfortunately, a very different conduct has been pursued. Knowledge in this branch of agriculture was some years ago much wanting ; but that is

no longer the case, there are many settlers that have arrived within a few years in South Carolina, perfectly acquainted with the business, but whose mean circumstances have proved the only obstacles they have met with : it is such men to whom public assistance should be given, for the public is more interested in their success than even themselves.

This is an object which ought not to be left to itself ; the import of wine into this kingdom carries out of it an immense balance in cash, which throws a dead weight into very considerable branches of our commerce. North America consumes large quantities of Madeira, which consumption will in part be varied to that of their own wines before they can be expected to be brought in any quantities into this kingdom : hence the necessity of acting with some vigour, if we expect to see any beneficial consequences of many years.

Silk is another object which should be attended to with great seriousness ; the back parts of this province are full of mulberry-trees, and the climate is of that due temperature which is requisite for success in this culture : as fine silk has been brought from Carolina as ever came from China,

insomuch that at some of our mills it is preferred to any we receive either from the East Indies or Italy. The common objection of a want of people, I have before shewn is weakly founded in any case, since a few people, nay a single family, may make as large a proportion of it, as if the whole country was employed about nothing else: it is so much a-head that may be made in a season, perhaps a pound and a half, or two pounds; so that if a family consists of twenty persons, they may make thirty or forty pounds annually; if it consists of two hundred persons, the proportion will be the same; but if it is only two or three, it is equally so: the population of the country therefore has perhaps less to do with it than in any other article of culture. The object wanting, is to induce the people to undertake it—to give them instructions how to feed the worms, and to manage the cocoons; but this is easily learned, and might become general through the province if proper measures were taken for it; which might be executed at an inconsiderable expence. It would be a very fine thing for this nation if all the inhabitants of our colonies, possessing a proper climate, were to make each, only a pound of raw
filk;

silk ; it would be as valuable an acquisition as this nation could make : to acquire a Martinico or a Guadalupe would probably cost thirty or forty millions sterling ; but such a matter of mere internal management would be far more valuable, and might be had for one quarter of as many thousands. In every instance that can be named, domestic improvement is of more consequence, and easier of attainment, than military acquisition ; yet is mankind ever panting after one, and neglecting the other.

No trials have yet been made of madder in Carolina, though there are tracts of a rich, deep, black, and reddish loams in the back parts of the province which would undoubtedly produce great crops of it, and the climate would probably suit it better than that of England ; for it is not the madder of Zealand that is the most extraordinary ; that of Turkey, Asia Minor, and Cyprus is of a vastly greater size and better quality without any culture at all ; no doubt can therefore be entertained of the climate suiting it. There is no crop upon which they can go that would pay them better ; madder is worth from 8*l.* to 9*l.* a ton ; in England the deduction of 6*l.* or 6*l.* 10*s.* for freight would be but a small proportion.

An acre of good land, well chosen and properly cultivated, would, in the climate of the back part of South Carolina, yield from a ton to a ton and a half; and one negroe would manage above an acre very well, and have the winter months to be employed on fences and lumber besides: there are no crops in America that would answer much better than this, since it would be above 40l. per slave per annum. The value of the commodity would also make it peculiarly adapted to those tracts of country that had not a good water-carriage for bulky commodities; a small canoe, which would run up any little branches of the rivers, would carry a ton of it, which would be more valuable than a ton of many other commodities: for the same reason indigo and silk should be particularly encouraged in those districts where water-carriage is indifferent or at some distance.

Hemp in this respect is not of the same importance, but for their lower grounds on a strong clay foundation in these back parts, where the low grounds are far more fertile than in the maritime part of the province, hemp would be a very valuable article of culture, if near a good navigation. Such tracts are numerous, and would, if well culti-

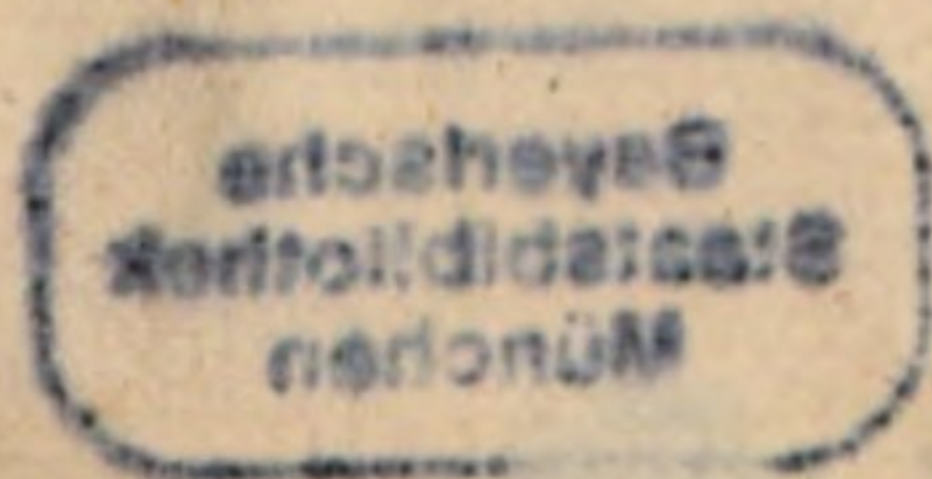
cultivated under hemp, save us no slight proportion of those immense sums which we annually pay to the Baltic for this commodity. Improvements in our colonies in this article ought every where to be most assiduously promoted; not in one settlement, by making it an only staple in the nature of the rice, indigo, or tobacco; it will not admit of this, because it is nice in soil, but all the spots suitable to it in all our colonies, from Nova Scotia to Florida, should be thus appropriated; no planter, unless he was particularly situated, need have hemp for his principal dependence; but all should have some of it that had but a small field of right soil: America would then much more than supply all our demand and her own too; and as the colonies increased in cultivation, Europe would be a constant market for all they could produce. It is a fortunate circumstance that hemp grows best in a soil that is not suitable to any of the other staples of America, so that it could not rival them: it delights in a moist, low, rich loam, on a clay bottom, and never thrives to good advantage in a dry or light soil, however rich, but will not do in a swamp, unless very rich and perfectly drained. Indigo and tobacco require
the

the black dry loam, regardless of the stratum under it, provided it be not wet; and rice can only be had in a swamp under water: it is upon this account that hemp would not rival their present staples, in the soil it requires, which is a matter of consequence; for in many plantations the land suitable to these productions is not so plentiful as to make it a matter of indifference how the planter disposes of it, especially in the maritime part of the province.

Those who think the success met with in South Carolina in the culture of indigo and rice a reason sufficient for excluding or neglecting other articles of produce, are much mistaken in that idea. It is in all countries of vast importance that the profit of agriculture should not depend on one or two productions; since in that case a failure in one is of fatal consequence, or a falling off in the sale of it may prove the ruin of a country. But when the husbandry of a people is employed about many objects, they have the beneficial chance, that if one fails others will succeed, and thereby prevent any great evils following: it is also of consequence, that the labour attending the products of a plantation be so divided, that as many hands be employed at one season
as

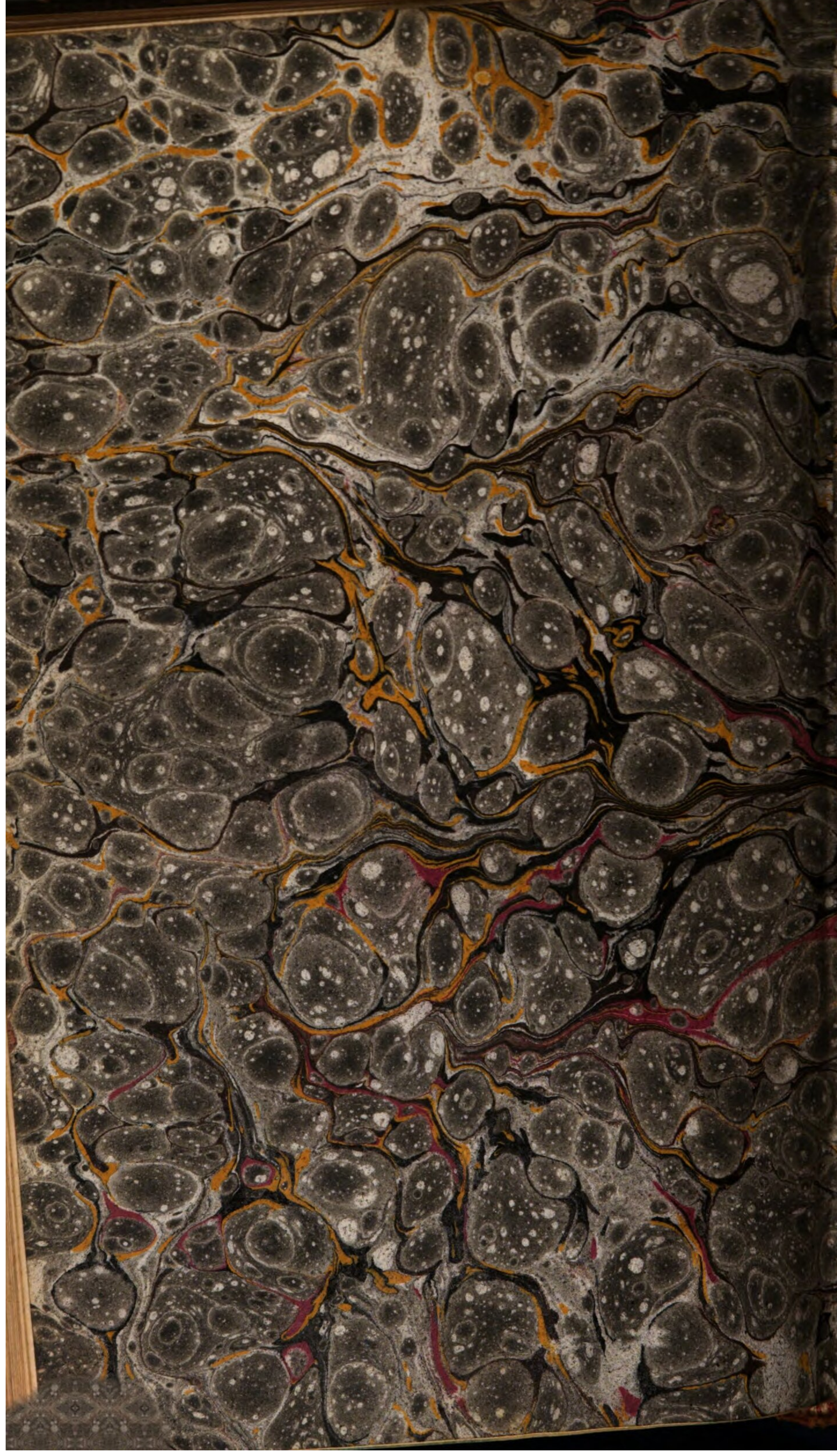
as at another ; for if the slaves are only employed in summer, or only in spring and autumn, the planter cannot make such profit by his business as if they were employed regularly the year through. The planters of Carolina and our other colonies have not yet felt the necessity of this doctrine, from the circumstance of sawing lumber, for the West Indies finding them employment at all leisure times ; but this branch of their business is confined to the amount of the West India market ; besides there are numerous tracts of country in which the timber has been long ago destroyed, but which are full of plantations, and it is very plain that in them lumber can be no dependence.

Winter sowing of several crops, threshing, clearing, carrying, and selling others, building fences, manuring, and other works, should keep all the slaves of a plantation in regular employment through the winter season, without a dependence for it on lumber. Spring sowings, and the vernal attendance on crops, with making silk, would fill up that season. The summer culture and cleaning which most plants require, with the harvest, are always sufficient to fill up several months ; then should succeed the vintage, and making crops of madder,



madder, hemp, &c. In such a disposition of the lands and business of a plantation, the planter would find much greater profit than what he now makes by the assistance of two or three months of the slaves at lumber. And this is reason sufficient were others wanting, which however is far enough from being the case, for inducing the Carolina planters to divide their attention more in imitation of the best husbandmen in Europe.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.





American Husbandry Containing an Account of the Soil, Climate, Production
and Agriculture, Of The British Colonies In North-America and the West-
Indies; With Observations on the Advantages and Disadvantages of settling
in them, compared with Great Britain and Ireland
Bd.: 1

London (1775)

Oecon. 911-1

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10296080-4